

2-10-15  
Library of the Theological Seminary,

PRINCETON, N. J.







## CHAPTERS ON THE BOOK OF MULLING

*Printed by Neill & Company, Edinburgh*

FOR

DAVID DOUGLAS

LONDON . . . . . SIMPKIN, MARSHALL, HAMILTON, KENT, AND CO., LIM.

CAMBRIDGE . . . . . MACMILLAN AND BOWES.

GLASGOW . . . . . JAMES MACLEHOSE AND SONS.







# CHAPTERS

ON THE

# BOOK OF MULLING

BY

✓  
H. J. LAWLOR, B. D.

SENIOR CHAPLAIN OF ST MARY'S CATHEDRAL, EDINBURGH, AND  
EXAMINING CHAPLAIN TO THE BISHOP OF EDINBURGH

---

EDINBURGH: DAVID DOUGLAS

1897

[*All rights reserved.*]



IN PIAM MEMORIAM  
CARISSIMORUM

K. A. H. L.

J. H. L.

A. S.      K. S.





# CONTENTS.

## CHAPTER I.

	PAGE
INTRODUCTORY, . . . . .	1

## CHAPTER II.

THE COLOPHON, . . . . .	6
-------------------------	---

## CHAPTER III.

THE SECTIONS, . . . . .	30
-------------------------	----

## CHAPTER IV.

THE BIBLICAL TEXT, . . . . .	42
------------------------------	----

## CHAPTER V.

THE OLD LATIN PASSAGES, . . . . .	76
-----------------------------------	----

## CHAPTER VI.

AFFINITIES OF THE IRISH OLD LATIN TEXT, . . . . .	129
---	-----

## CHAPTER VII.

THE LAST PAGE. I. THE LITURGICAL FRAGMENT, . . . . .	145
--	-----

## CHAPTER VIII.

THE LAST PAGE.—II. THE CIRCULAR DEVICE, . . . . .	167
---	-----

## APPENDIX A.

THE OLD LATIN PORTIONS OF "THE GARLAND OF HOWTH," . . . . .	186
---	-----

## APPENDIX B.

THE SCRIBES OF THE BOOK OF MULLING, . . . . .	202
---	-----

INDEX, . . . . .	204
------------------	-----



# THE BOOK OF MULLING.

---

## CHAPTER I.

### INTRODUCTORY.

M. BERGER, in his account of the early Irish Biblical Texts,<sup>1</sup> gives special prominence to two manuscripts which he describes as among the most important of the national manuscripts of Ireland. The first of these is the celebrated Book of Armagh, the other is that which is the subject of this essay, the Book of Mulling. The principal contents of this book are the four Gospels in Latin, but it has also the prefaces of Jerome, the table of the Eusebian Canons, an Office for the Visitation of the Sick, and other matter of which some account will be given in succeeding chapters. The book can scarcely be dated later than the third quarter of the ninth century, for an incidental notice in the *Annals of the Four Masters*<sup>2</sup> of the monastery in which it was beyond doubt written, proves that shortly after that time it had become a Danish settlement. Palæographers, judging from the character of the script, assign it to that, or the previous century.

Notwithstanding the interest and importance of our manuscript it has received but little attention from students of the ancient lore of Ireland. To Archbishop Ussher it appears to have been unknown. There is no reference to it, so far as I can discover, in the many volumes of his works.

The first author in whose writings I have found a notice of the book is the well-known Irish antiquary General Vallancey. For him, however, that which was of main interest was not the book, which he seems to have examined in the most cursory fashion, but its ancient case or cundach, of which, under the name of the Liath

<sup>1</sup> *L'Histoire de la Vulgate pendant les premiers siècles du Moyen Âge*, par Samuel Berger, Paris, 1893, p. 31.

<sup>2</sup> A.D. 888. "A battle was gained by Riagan, son of Dunghal, over the foreigners of . . . Tech-moling."

Meisicith, he gives a lengthy description.<sup>1</sup> All that is really known of this shrine is that it was in existence—possibly even then a venerable relic—in the year 1402.<sup>2</sup> Vallancey ascribed to it a much greater antiquity, and was persuaded that it had come down from the ancient Druids. Of its contents he briefly and not very correctly writes :—

“It contains a number of loose sheets of vellum, on which are written extracts of the gospel and prayers for the sick, in the Latin language, and in the Irish character. There are also some drawings in water colours of the apostles, not ill executed; these are supposed to be the work of Saint Moling, the patron of that part of the country.”<sup>3</sup>

When Vallancey wrote (1783<sup>4</sup>), the Book of Mulling was still, as it had been for many centuries, in the charge of the family of Kavanagh, and was seen by him at their family seat at Borris Idrone, only a few miles from the site of the monastery founded by St Molling of Ferns, known as Tech Moling, or in its anglicised form, St Mullins. But a few years later it was deposited, with its cundach, and the Charter Horn of the Kavanaghs, in Trinity College, Dublin. It thus became more accessible to scholars.

Among those who subsequently inspected it in its new resting place was the indefatigable entomologist and student of ancient manuscripts, Mr J. O. Westwood, to whom Trinity College owes so much for making generally known many of the priceless literary treasures which it possesses. Westwood's *Paleographia Sacra Pictoria* appeared between 1843 and 1845, and in it<sup>5</sup> a description (unfortunately not very accurate) of the Book of Mulling,<sup>6</sup> together with facsimiles of a few lines of its writing.

Some years later our manuscript was incidentally mentioned by Professor O'Curry in his *Manuscript Materials*, and the Appendix to that work was enriched with two facsimiles of its script, one being taken from Jerome's Preface to St John's Gospel, the other from Matt. vi. 9 *sqq.* (the Lord's Prayer), accompanied by a brief description.<sup>7</sup>

But about this time the attention of liturgical students was drawn

<sup>1</sup> Vallancey, *Collectanea de Rebus Hibernicis*, Dublin, 1786, vol. iv. no. xiii. pp. 13-21.

<sup>2</sup> See Professor Abbott's "Note on the Book of Mulling" in *Hermathena*, viii. 89.

<sup>3</sup> The Rev. J. F. M. French, in his article entitled "St Mullins, Co. Carlow," in the *Journal of the Royal Society of Antiquaries of Ireland*, 5th series, part iv. vol. ii. p. 379, repeats almost verbatim this description of Vallancey.

<sup>4</sup> This is the date appended to the dedication of his thirteenth number, which is inscribed to the Society of Antiquaries of Scotland.

<sup>5</sup> "Irish Biblical MSS.," Plate II. (Letterpress, p. 4 *sq.*). Some account of the book is given also in his later work, *Facsimiles of the Miniatures and Ornaments of Anglo-Saxon and Irish Manuscripts*, London, 1868, p. 93.

<sup>6</sup> Westwood's descriptions are the basis of that given by Miss M. Stokes in *Early Christian Art in Ireland*, p. 24 *sq.*

<sup>7</sup> O'Curry's *Lectures on the Manuscript Materials of Ancient Irish History*, Dublin, 1861, pp. 23, 335 *sq.*, App., pl. 5, p. 653.

to the Office for the Visitation of the Sick which is found at the close of St Matthew's Gospel. The late Dr William Reeves, Bishop of Down, Connor, and Dromore, whose loss Irish antiquarians still mourn, supplied a transcript of this Office to Bishop A. P. Forbes of Brechin, by whom it was printed in the preface to his edition of the Arbuthnott Missal.<sup>1</sup> The Visitation Office was again printed by Mr F. E. Warren in 1881.<sup>2</sup>

After an interval of five years from the publication of the Arbuthnott Missal (in 1869) two works appeared almost simultaneously, in which attention was called to the character of the Biblical text contained in our manuscript. The first in order of time was the first volume of Haddan and Stubbs' *Councils*.<sup>3</sup> In an appendix to this work the attempt was made to prove the existence of a distinct Irish recension of the Latin Scriptures, and to trace the general history of the text of the Bible in that country in the centuries following the introduction of Christianity. Among other codices collated for this purpose was the Book of Mulling; and once more the hand of Dr Reeves was engaged in the task. Later in the same year Dr John Stuart edited for the Spalding Club the remarkable relic of the early Scottish Church which had been discovered in the Cambridge University Library, twelve years before, by Mr Henry Bradshaw.<sup>4</sup> At the end of his preface,<sup>5</sup> Dr Stuart printed, in parallel columns, collations of the fourth chapter of the Gospel according to St John as given in the principal Irish codices—and one of the columns is assigned to our book.

In the Introduction to the first part of Gilbert's great collection of *Facsimiles of National Manuscripts of Ireland*, published in 1874, our manuscript is once more described,<sup>6</sup> unfortunately in the most meagre fashion. But what specially distinguishes this notice of the book is the fact that three complete pages are given in facsimile, together with one of the drawings of the evangelists alluded to by Vallancey and Westwood. The reproduced pages are f. 42 r and v (Matt. xviii. 8—xix. 16), and f. 94 r (John xxi. 13–25 and colophon).<sup>7</sup> On the opposite pages of Gilbert's work the text of these passages is printed line for line, contractions being expanded. It is strange that, with Westwood's *Palaeographia* before him, Gilbert has read only fourteen words of the colophon, and of these, at least two incorrectly.

Finally, in 1893, was published the epoch-making work of M.

<sup>1</sup> *Liber Ecclesie Beati Terrenani de Arbuthnott. Missale secundum usum Ecclesie Sancti Andree in Scotia*, Burntisland, 1864, pp. x, sq., xx, sqq.

<sup>2</sup> *Liturgy and Ritual of the Celtic Church*, Oxford, 1881, p. 171 sqq.

<sup>3</sup> *Councils and Ecclesiastical Documents relating to Great Britain and Ireland*, vol. i., Oxford, 1869, Appendix G. (pp. 170–198).

<sup>4</sup> G. W. Prothero, *Memoir of Henry Bradshaw*, London, 1888, p. 69.

<sup>5</sup> *The Book of Deer, edited for the Spalding Club*, by John Stuart, LL.D., Edinburgh, 1869, p. xxxiv, sqq.

<sup>6</sup> *National MSS. of Ireland*, i. p. xiii.

<sup>7</sup> *Ib.*, pl. xx., xxi.

Berger, to which reference was made at the beginning of this chapter. It gives a description of our manuscript, with some interesting observations on its text.<sup>1</sup>

This is an enumeration as complete as I have been able to make it—though doubtless the learned reader will observe some omissions—of the principal notices of the Book of Mulling up to the present time.

The latest event in its history is the satisfactory settlement of a controversy which had been for some time pending between the representatives of its former owners and the authorities of Trinity College. The point in dispute was whether, when towards the close of the last century it was deposited in the College, it was placed there merely for safe keeping during the troublous times preceding the Union, or was conveyed to the University of Dublin as a gift by the then head of the family of Kavanagh. In accordance with the agreement finally reached, the manuscript has been definitely acknowledged to be the property of the College, while its ancient shrine has been restored to Walter Kavanagh, Esq., D.L., and now once more rests in Borris House.

It remains to pen a few words about the purpose and aim of the present essay. Let it be at once said that the design of the writer is not to give an exhaustive account of the book. He is quite conscious that many things have been left unsaid upon which students might desire to have information. He is conscious also that the subjects upon which, in the pages now offered to the public, he has touched have been but imperfectly treated. But his aim throughout has been rather to stimulate the interest of others far more competent than himself for such investigations, than to give a complete account of the manuscript. He has, therefore, contented himself with selecting one or two features of the book which had been scarcely noticed by previous writers, and discussing them as best he could. Much remains for other better equipped workers in the same field.

It is a pleasant task to enumerate here those to whose kind assistance I have been most beholden while conducting the researches, the results of which are now set forth. Professor Gwynn first introduced me to the study which has proved a constant source of pleasure. Abundant help and encouragement have been given by him, by his colleague, Professor Bernard, and by the Rev. Thomas Olden. It is scarcely likely that, without the help of these three friends, this book would have been undertaken. But not to these alone must gratitude be expressed. The Rev. J. M. Harden has spent much valuable time in examining, with care and accuracy, many of the manuscripts preserved in the libraries of Trinity College and the Royal Irish Academy, a change in my residence having made it impossible for me to consult them, except at rare intervals; and the

<sup>1</sup> *Op. cit.*, pp. 33, 350.

Rev. J. A. MacCulloch has performed the wearisome task of reading the proofs. To them it is due that the errors in these pages are much fewer than they would otherwise have been. Mr J. H. Cunningham, F.S.A. Scot., has also given me valuable help, which is acknowledged at p. 183. I take this opportunity of thanking the Provost and Senior Fellows of Trinity College, Dublin, for their kind assistance in defraying the cost of publication.

Chapters IV. and VI. have already appeared in the *Proceedings of the Society of Antiquaries of Scotland*, and Chapters VII. and VIII. are founded on a communication to the same Society.

## CHAPTER II.

## THE COLOPHON.

THE colophon of the Book of Mulling is written on the concluding page of St John's Gospel (f. 94 *r*). It occupies the four last lines of the first column, and the first few lines of the second. Several attempts have been made to read it, and a portion has been reproduced in facsimile by Westwood in his *Palæographia Sarra*. But as mistakes have crept into all the published transcripts which I have seen, I give it here in full, so far as I have been able to decipher the faded letters.

col. a. ꝥINIT amen ꝥINIT  
 ó tv quicūq: Scripseris  
 † scrutatus fueris † etiā  
 uideris h̄ uolumin dñi orá  
 a

col. b. — — — — — p — — — — —  
 — — — — — [ni]ssericordiā suā  
 — — — — — s p̄ eliuosū mundi in —  
 — — — usq: altissimum:—  
 [N]omen h̄ scriptoris mulling  
 dicitur Finiunt quatuor euan  
 gelia

This colophon is to form the text of our discourse in the present chapter. If the discourse does not always adhere very strictly to the limits suggested by the text, it does no more than many other discourses have done. My excuse must be that there are some things which I feel ought to be said about our book, and that I know of no place more fitting for saying them than the present.

§ I. *The Form of the Book.*

"O tu quicumque scripseris uel scrutatus fueris uel etiam uideris hæc uolumina." Such is the opening address of the colophon of Mulling. Incidentally, it presents us with a description of the book, meagre but worth noting, "hæc uolumina." These two words have not, indeed, so far as I am aware, been hitherto so read. Mr Westwood printed them "h̄ (=hæc) uolumen," others, more grammatically, but less correctly, "hoc volumen." There can, I believe, be no doubt that "hæc uolumina" is correct, though the final letter easily escapes notice, being much faded and written below the line.



The author of the colophon then describes his book as consisting of several distinct fasciuli or volumina. That this is true of the Book of Mulling as we have it I now propose to show. It is not applicable, be it observed, to what is handed to the student who asks for our manuscript in the library of Trinity College, Dublin. This is a large quarto volume of paper leaves, in each of which is inserted, with all the skill which marks the work of the binders employed by the British Museum, a leaf of vellum. The volume is duly described on the back, "Book of Mulling," and its contents are arranged in the following order: (1) ff. 1-17, Gospel according to St Mark; (2) ff. 18-28, Jerome's Epistle to Damasus, the Arguments of the Gospels, and the Eusebian Canons; (3) ff. 29-50, Gospel according to St Matthew, and other matter; (4) ff. 51-53, three portraits; (5) ff. 54-81, Gospel according to St Luke; (6) ff. 82-94, Gospel according to St John, colophon and other matter; (7) ff. 95-98, fragments of St Matthew and St Mark; (9) f. 99, blank. It may perhaps be a relief to learn that some of the folios here brought together do not belong to our book, and that for the rest the peculiar arrangement indicated above has no other source than the ingenuity of the binder.

In the year 1892 I undertook to make a collation of the Biblical text of the so-called "Book of Mulling," now included in this volume. I will describe the condition in which it was on the 18th of February 1893, the day on which my collation was completed. In doing so, I am obliged to depend on notes made without any intention of publication, and much less complete and satisfactory than they might have been had I known that I should have no opportunity in the future of revising them by comparison with the manuscript in the state in which it then was.<sup>1</sup>

There lay, in February 1893, in the library of Trinity College, where it had rested for more than a century, an ancient cundach, inscribed with the name of "Arthurus rex dominus Iagenie," better known as Art MacMurrrough Kavanagh († 1417), the opponent of Richard II.,<sup>2</sup> and containing, unstitched and unbound, five fasciuli of vellum leaves, six loose leaves, and one pair of conjugate leaves, the contents and arrangement of which will, I trust, be made clear by the accompanying diagrams and the following description. In the diagrams each leaf is indicated by a line, those which have been lost by dotted lines, and each is connected with its conjugate by a line. Where conjugates had been dismembered when I examined the manuscript, a

<sup>1</sup> I may note that my reconstruction does not seem to agree with that of M. Berger, who must have examined the manuscript some little time before it fell to my lot to do so. He notes (*L'Histoire*, p. 389), "Cahiers de 12, 22, 17, 1, 28, 14 et 4 ff.; 98 ff. Les 4 ff. de la fin contiennent un fragment de Matth. xxvii. et xxviii., et de Marc. i.-vi.; ils sont étrangers au ms." He had already remarked (p. 34), "Les feuillets étant détachés, il a été quelque peu difficile de reconstituer les cahiers." If I understand his figures they must involve some error. The actual number of leaves now bound together is 99, not 98. If he includes lost leaves (as he seems to do in at least the first gathering), the total would be increased.

<sup>2</sup> See Professor Abbott in *Hermathena*, viii. p. 90.

row of dots is substituted for the connecting line. The figures in thick type indicate the numbers given to the folios by the British Museum binders; those in ordinary type, numbers which correspond more nearly with the intention of the scribes.

I. The first "volumen," or gathering, at present consists of five pairs of conjugate leaves and one single leaf. There are from twenty-three to twenty-six lines on each page, written all across the page, and about forty letters in each line.<sup>1</sup> It contains (1) f. 18 *r*, Jerome's Epistle to Damasus (the earlier part); (2) f. 19, the arguments of the several Gospels (the first portion of that of St Matthew being lost), ending in the middle of f. 21 *v* with the rubricated subscription, partly retraced in black, "finit [argum]en-[tum euangeliorum]"; and (3) f. 22, the Eusebian Canons (part of the 10th Canon being lost). The hand appears to be the same as that in which the Gospels are written, if indeed we may assume that they were penned throughout by a single scribe. Vermilion appears in the headings to the arguments of the several Gospels ("de iohanne," etc.), in the subscription to that of St John, and in the Eusebian Canons. Large ornamental initials (uncoloured) are prefixed to the epistle and the several arguments. The leaves measure about 16·5 × 11·8 cent.

The original contents of this gathering may be inferred from the following considerations. The portion of the epistle ("Novum Opus") contained in f. 18 ends with the words "quod in," p. 3, l. 9, of Bishop Wordsworth's edition of the Vulgate, and is thus represented by 37 lines of that work. The lost portion of the epistle is therefore the equivalent of 24 of Bishop Wordsworth's lines. The earlier portion of the argument of St Matthew, also lost (all before "resurgens," Wordsworth, p. 16, l. 9), = 13 lines. The two together would therefore make 37 lines, or exactly the same amount as f. 18 of our MS. From this we may infer that one leaf intervened between the present ff. 18 and 19, and that it contained the remainder of the epistle and the opening part of the first argument. It is more difficult to determine the contents of the pages which have disappeared at the end. If neither the first nor second (lost) leaf was without conjugate, there must have been at least two of them, as represented in the diagram. On the recto of the first of these was the second half of Canon 10 (all after § 94), which may have filled about one-third of the page. The remainder of these two leaves would have sufficed for the "Prologus Quattuor Evangeliorum" (Wordsworth, p. 11, where it fills 64 lines = nearly 3½ pp. of our book). This fact in itself, in the absence of conflicting evidence, justifies the assumption that both f. 18 and the lost leaf following it had conjugates, as represented in the diagram. Fol. 18 has no marks of stitching, but its inner edge is much worn. Its present width is 11·35 cent. That this gathering was written by the same scribe as those that follow appears to be the opinion of all palaeographers who have examined the book. It is one which it seems safe to accept. The hand no doubt differs in some respects from that found in the Gospels, as may be seen from Professor O'Curry's facsimile (*Lectures on the Manuscript Materials of Irish History*, Appendix, pl. 5). But it differs no more from the writing of any part of the Gospels than the writing of one of their pages frequently differs from another. Any one who will compare the exquisite script of the early chapters of St Matthew or St Luke with that of the last pages of St John, will

<sup>1</sup> This, of course, does not apply to the Canons.

be sufficiently impressed with this fact. Indeed, a glance at two consecutive pages will sometimes enable us to detect striking variations in the character of the hand. Thus the writing of f. 62 *r* (Luke vii. 4-27) is manifestly inferior to that of f. 61 *v* (Luke vi. 36-vii. 4), and in passing from the latter to the former we meet with several changes in the form of the letters, etc.—e.g.,  $\frac{7}{5}$  is used for  $\div$  (=est), 5 for  $\bar{5}$  (*g*),  $d\bar{x}$  for  $d\bar{x}$  (=dixit), etc., and the form of the letter *t* (that which is commonly used throughout the MS.) differs from that found in the immediately preceding pages. It will be evident to the student who compares them together, that the writing of this leaf closely resembles that of the first fasciculus. The peculiarities now mentioned are gradually dropped on the verso of the leaf, and the normal type of writing reappears on f. 63.

II. The second gathering consisted, as the diagram shows, of eleven pairs of conjugate leaves. Two, originally conjugate, afterwards became dismembered (ff. 29, 50). This quire contained St Matthew's Gospel, ending in the middle of the second column of f. 49 *v*, with the subscription "finit amen finit." The remainder of this column and the following leaf were left blank. On the vacant portion of f. 49 *v*, and on f. 50 *r*, was subsequently written by another scribe<sup>1</sup> the Office for the Communion of the Sick,<sup>2</sup> f. 50 *v* still remaining blank. The writing is bi-columnar, and better executed than that of the preceding fasciculus. The number of lines in a column varies from 25 to 41, being greater towards the end of the Gospel. The average size of a page in this and the three succeeding gatherings is at present 16.4 × 11.9 cent. Elaborate initials, finely drawn and coloured, are found at the beginnings of the Gospels, and at St Matt. i. 18. They have the usual rows of red dots, double in St Matthew and St Mark, single (apparently) in St Luke and St John.

An examination of the Office for the Communion of the Sick (ff. 49 *r*, 50 *r*) appears to justify the statement just made that it is by a different hand from the Gospel. (1) The writing is neater here than anywhere else in the manuscript. (2) The use of large and carefully formed initial letters is much more frequent than usual. (3) Here—one might almost say here alone—the page is divided by lines ruled with a pointed instrument for the guidance of the scribe. Elsewhere, the points at which the lines of writing are intended to begin are occasionally marked, but these marks are but little attended to in practice. (4) Here alone the margins are ruled with two parallel lines, one to serve as a boundary for the ordinary writing, the other for the large initials which stand outside it. It seems improbable that a scribe would expend so much more care on a liturgical office, which is evidently only an addendum to his real work, than on the sacred text itself. (5) The form of several of the letters is peculiar to this part of the book. Such, for example, are *d*, *r*, *g*, and the diphthong *ae*, elsewhere represented commonly by *g*, here by *e*. And lastly (6) some of the *compendia scribendi* used by the writer of these pages are very rare in the manuscript, if they occur elsewhere at all. As instances, we may refer to *û* for *ut* or *usque*, the symbols for *per* (*p*, else-

<sup>1</sup> Westwood (*Pal. Sac.*, "Irish Biblical MSS.," ii. p. 4) says emphatically: "The original scribe had" written this Office (the italics are his). But emphasis does not necessarily imply accuracy. In the very next line he declares, with a like use of italics, that the ornamental initials at the beginnings of the Gospels are "not coloured." This is an extraordinary mis-statement. But, indeed, Mr Westwood's account of the Book of Mulling is very inexact throughout.

<sup>2</sup> Printed in Warren's *Liturgy and Ritual of the Celtic Church*, p. 171 sqq., and Forbes' *Arbuthnott Missal*, p. x, sq.

where *p̄*) and *pro* (*p* : elsewhere *p̄*), and the abbreviations *ōīa* for *omnia*, and *scīa* for *secula*. The page is ruled for 33 lines of writing.

III. The third "volumen" contains St Mark's Gospel, and consists of at least six (ff. 8, 9 probably once formed a seventh) conjugate pairs of leaves, and three (or five) single leaves (ff. 4, 15, 16), two of which, it will be noticed, immediately precede the final leaf of the gathering—in all 17 leaves. The writing is again bi-columnar, and there are from 26 to 32 lines in a column. The subscription "finit" is written at f. 17*ra*, l. 19, the remainder of the page being left blank.

IV. Here, for St Luke's Gospel, as the diagram again shows us, we have 13 conjugate pairs, and two single leaves (ff. 76, 79) inserted near the end of the quire—altogether 28 leaves. There are from 27 to 39 lines in a column. The Gospel ends on f. 81*rb*, with the subscription "finit amen finit," the part of the column following this being left blank.

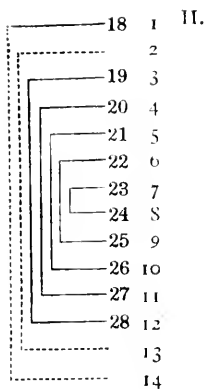
V. St John's Gospel is written in a gathering of 13 leaves, the last of which (f. 94) had no conjugate. The remainder of the fasciculus consists of six pairs of leaves, five of which, and probably the sixth (ff. 83, 92), were conjugates. The inner edges of ff. 84, 91 are quite fresh, so that these leaves must have been recently parted from one another. The Gospel ends on f. 94 *r a*, and is immediately followed by the colophon. The greater part of the second column of this page is blank. The verso of the leaf is occupied with matter which will be considered at some length in subsequent chapters. The writing of this gathering is distinctly inferior to that of those which have been already described. It is bi-columnar, except in f. 93, both recto and verso of which have three columns.<sup>1</sup> Towards the end the writing becomes smaller, and the number of lines in a column much greater. The number of lines ranges from 26 on the recto of f. 82, to 50 on f. 93 *r*.

We have now come to the end of the matter which, as I believe, has a clearly established claim to have formed part of the Book of Mulling in its final shape. We have gone far enough also to see that the expression of the colophon is absolutely accurate—"hæc volumina." These "volumina" were never (till these later days) bound together: but that each was separately stitched was, if my memory does not deceive me,<sup>2</sup> vouched for by holes made for the purpose, in such of the sheets (making pairs of leaves) as time and rough usage had left in anything approaching their original condition. They may still be seen in at least three of the six inserted leaves (ff. 4, 16, 79, and perhaps 15, 76). Where these holes are found their distance from the outer edge of the leaf is about the width of an ordinary page. We may remark that the scribe was evidently most anxious to confine each Gospel to its own fasciculus, though he makes grievous

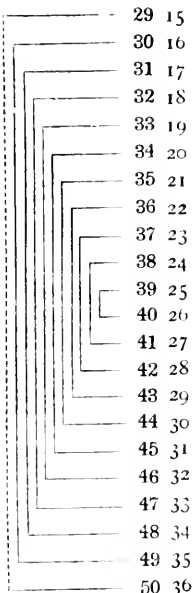
<sup>1</sup> This temporary lapse into tri-columnar writing finds a parallel in the Book of Armagh: Stokes, *Tripartite Life*, p. xc.

<sup>2</sup> Even now enough can be discerned to convince me that my recollection is not altogether at fault.

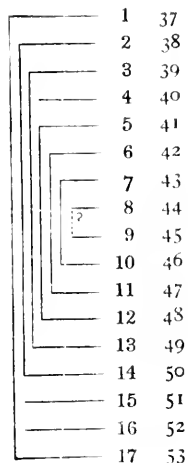
I.



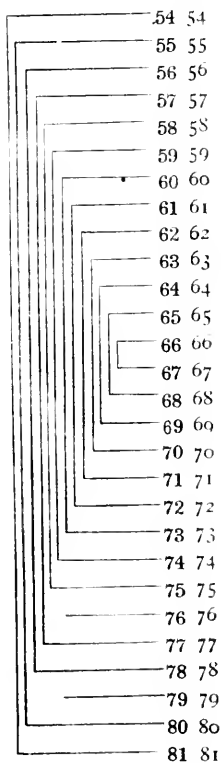
II.



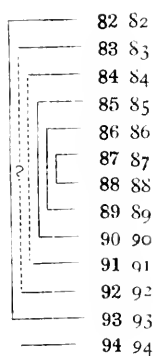
III.



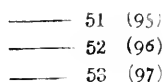
IV.



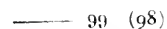
V.



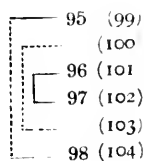
VI.



VII.



VIII.





miscalculations as to the space required. Thus in St Matthew, he begins in a fine bold hand with 26 lines to a page. As the work advances he seems to become afraid that the quire is too small for what he had designed that it should contain. He accordingly writes more closely, lengthens the lines, and increases the number of lines in each column to 35 or 40, finally ending the Gospel with more than a leaf in hand. In St Mark he miscalculates again, and is obliged to insert two leaves at the end. The same fate awaits him in St Luke. In St John, write as small and as closely as he will, the Gospel runs over its allotted space, and the last thirteen verses demand a special leaf for themselves.

This appears to be the best place to remark that the method of writing here exemplified, each Gospel having a separate gathering, seems not to have been uncommon in the early Celtic Churches. The same arrangement is found in the manuscript known as "St Patrick's Gospels" (*Royal Irish Academy*, 24. Q. 23).<sup>1</sup> The familiar portraits of the evangelists again, each holding a book (of which the drawings formerly preserved in the cundach of the Book of Mulling are a specimen), indicate that the Gospels were usually regarded as consisting of *four* volumes, and not one. In later times the several Gospels were sometimes provided with separate shrines or cundachs. Witness the pictures of the evangelists in the Book of Deer, depicted with books, *in cases*, suspended from their shoulders.<sup>2</sup> So again at Banchory-Ternan was preserved, in the early part of the sixteenth century, the Gospel according to St Matthew, written by St Ternan. Both it and the remaining Gospels, written by his hand, were said to have been enclosed in metal cases, adorned with gold and silver.<sup>3</sup> And in like manner St Patrick is represented as bestowing, in one instance,<sup>4</sup> the "*libri æuangueli*"; in another, the "likeness of the case of the Book of John,"<sup>5</sup> upon churches founded by him, while he and St Brigit are spoken of as "sowing the *four books* of the Gospel with a sowing of faith, and belief, and piety."<sup>6</sup> A further illustration will be found in the next chapter, where it is proved that the Gospels of our book are copied from at least three different exemplars. And indeed, several examples are known of single Gospels being copied apart.<sup>7</sup>

<sup>1</sup> J. H. Bernard, *Trans. R.I.A.*, xxx. 307 sq.

<sup>2</sup> Such at least seems to be the probable explanation. See Stuart, *Book of Deer*, p. xx.

<sup>3</sup> Martyrology of Aberdeen (*Proceedings of Society of Antiquaries of Scotland*, ii. p. 264): "Pridie Idus Junij.—In Scotia natalis sancti Terrenani Pictorum archipresulis apud ecclesiam de Banquorefterny sepultus. . . . Eunangelistarum quoque *quatuor voluminibus* metallo inclusis argento auro texto in superficie fabricatis remuneraretur quorum Mathei euangeliste volumen adhuc apud Banquory."

<sup>4</sup> Muirechu Macen-Mactheni's notes in the *Book of Armagh*, f. 8 b. 2. Cf. Whitley Stokes, *Tripartite Life*, i. p. excvii.

<sup>5</sup> Stokes, *Tripartite Life*, i. p. 87.

<sup>6</sup> Stokes, *Lives of Saints from Book of Lismore*, p. 193.

<sup>7</sup> The Stonyhurst St John (Berger, *L'Histoire*, p. 39), the St Gall St John

We must now examine the remaining leaves formerly preserved in the cumdach of our book, and now bound up with it. To begin with the set numbered VIII. in our diagram. This contains St Matt. xxvi. 42—xxvii. 35 *mitteutes* (f. 95); St Mark i. 1—iv. 8 *dabit* (ff. 96, 97); and St Mark v. 18 *naueu*—vi. 35 *eius* (f. 98). These leaves appear to have formed part of a single manuscript, and, if so, they may have been two sheets of a quire as shown in the diagram. The writing is not columnar. The size of the leaves varies slightly, the length being from 15·4 to 15·9 cent., and the breadth from 12 to 12·3 cent.; ff. 95, 96, 98 have 36 lines in a page; f. 97 has 33. These fragments, of course, formed no part of our book.

It is scarcely worth while to discuss the blank leaf (f. 99), numbered here VII. It is smaller (15·2 × 11·8 cent.) than any of the four leaves just mentioned, and considerably smaller also than the leaves of the Book of Mulling. It is possibly an accidental intruder.

Of more importance is VI. (ff. 51, 52, 53), the three leaves on the rectos of which we find portraits, presumably of evangelists. They have been described by Mr Westwood in his *Palaographia*; and by him, as well as by others, are regarded as having formed part of our book.<sup>1</sup> This has, perhaps, been too hastily assumed. Their connection with our book is not proved by the fact that they were kept in the same case with it; for the fragments of St Matthew and St Mark, which we have just examined, were enshrined in St Mulling's cumdach also. And this is not the only instance of a manuscript having found its way into a shrine that was not meant for it.<sup>2</sup> Nor is their claim established by the near coincidence in the size of these pictorial leaves with those which undoubtedly belong to our book, for they agree in measurement even more closely with the leaves of St Matthew and St Mark already referred to. They measure, in fact, about 16 × 12·2 cent. In other words, they fall short of the average height of the pages of Mulling's book by nearly half a centimetre, while they exceed the average breadth by more than a quarter of a centimetre. The difference in breadth may indeed have been less originally than it is now, but for similar reasons the difference in height was probably greater.

(*ib.*, 56), and apparently at least one other copy of the same Gospel, which was in the St Gall Library in the ninth century (Keller, *Bilder u. Schriftzüge*, p. 61), and (this, of course, is not a Celtic MS.) the Chartres St John (Berger, p. 89). Not, however, the Stowe St John (Bernard, *Trans. R.I.A.*, xxx. 314). A copy of St Matthew's Gospel, apart from the others, is mentioned in the story of the invention of St Barnabas, written in the sixth century. See *AA.SS.*, Jun. 11, ii. pp. 422, 450. Whatever may be thought of the historical character of the narrative, the reference seems to prove that the writer was aware that such a manuscript existed. M. Berger remarks (*ib.*, 69) that St John was the only Gospel so copied in the early Middle Ages. But the statement seems to need some modification.

<sup>1</sup> Westwood, *Pal. Soc.*, "Irish Manuscripts," pl. ii. p. 5. Of other writers who accept this view I shall mention only one, M. Berger (*op. cit.*, p. 380). His knowledge of the Book of Mulling stands in striking contrast to that of some others who have written about it. It has been derived at first hand from an inspection of the manuscript itself.

<sup>2</sup> J. H. Bernard, *Trans. R.I.A.*, xxx. 305 sq., 313.



On the other hand, they are in exact agreement as to size with one of the leaves of the fragment—f. 98. But what makes the supposition that they belonged to our book specially doubtful is this. They have evidently no conjugates among the genuine pages of our book. Now the inserted leaves, which have the appearance of having suffered little injury, are, as we might expect, wider than the ordinary leaves of the manuscript;<sup>1</sup> and, moreover, they have, at a little distance from the inner edge, the marks of the stitching by which they were attached to their respective Gospels. This is not true of the leaves now under consideration. It seems, then, that if these pictures really belonged to our book, they must have lain loose in the case in which it was kept, without any mark to indicate the Gospels to which they severally belonged. When we add that analogy points to the belief that the Book of Mulling had no metal box such as that in which it was in later centuries preserved, for a considerable time after it was written, the improbability of the supposition becomes manifest.<sup>2</sup> It seems, on the whole, likely that these three pictures (connected quite possibly with some unknown manuscript) were put for safe keeping into the cundach of the Book of Mulling. They were put there, we may suppose, for no better reason than that, being nearly of the same size and shape as the inside of the box, they fitted it easily; just as, for the same reason no doubt, some other odd leaves of a Gospel book found their way into the same shrine, and as, owing to a similar agreement in size, the Stowe St John and the Stowe Missal were placed together in a single cundach, and ultimately bound together in one volume.<sup>3</sup>

## § 2. *The Date.*

What data have we for determining the period at which our manuscript was written?

Many scholars have been content to answer that question by quoting the words of the colophon, "[N]omen *hautem* scriptoris mulling dicitur." The Mulling here mentioned, it has been urged, can be no other than Molling, Bishop of Ferns, who died in the year 696.<sup>4</sup> The book is therefore expressly stated to have been penned by him, and must be dated in the latter part of the seventh century.

Let me at once say that I believe there is much force in this

<sup>1</sup> The average width is about 12·2 cent., which is identical with that of the pictorial pages.

<sup>2</sup> All that is certain about the date of the cundach of the Book of Mulling, as has been already remarked, is that it existed before A.D. 1402. Whether it was originally made as a shrine for our book we can never know, though its size and shape agree with this supposition (inside measurement, 18·2 × 13·3 cent.). The Book of Durrow (not later than the eighth century) was not enshrined till the end of the ninth; the Book of Armagh, written in 807, not until the following century. The shrine of the Cathach of St Columba, though the Psalter itself certainly belongs to a much earlier period, is dated 1084 (Miss M. Stokes' *Early Christian Art in Ireland*, p. 89 *sqq.*). That of the Stowe Missal may be contemporary with the later writing of the manuscript enclosed in it.

<sup>3</sup> Bernard, *Trans. R.I.A.*, xxx. 313.

<sup>4</sup> *Annals of Four Masters*, *Annals of Ulster*, A.D. 696; *Annals of Clonmacnoise*, 692; *Trip.*, p. 519, A.D. 693.

argument. In the first place, Molling is a name of extreme rarity. The seventh century bishop is the only person mentioned by it, so far as I have been able to discover, in the Irish annals.<sup>1</sup> This is the more remarkable on account of his celebrity. He was reckoned as one of the four prophets of Ireland. Now it is very common to find the names of great saints adopted by others of lesser note. Columba, for example, is very frequently met with. That Molling occurs but once appears to be accounted for by the fact that it is not in the strict sense a "name" at all. The true name of the saint was Dairecell, and he was called "Molling," the leaper, on account of his athletic prowess.<sup>2</sup> It is as much, therefore, a descriptive epithet as "Cœur de Lion" applied to Richard I. of England, or "le Chauve" applied to Charles II. of France. It is unlikely that it should be given to another. It may thus be regarded as highly probable that our "scriptor" was the famous Molling of Ferns.

And this probability becomes greater when we recall the history of the manuscript which bears the name. It was, until the end of the eighteenth century,<sup>3</sup> in the custody of the family of Kavanagh, of which St Molling was a member, and whose family seat at Borris Idrone is within a few miles of Tech Moling or St Mullins, the site of the monastery over which he presided. This fact leaves little room for doubt that, by whomsoever penned, every part of our book was written in the monastery of St Molling at St Mullins.<sup>4</sup>

But a further confirmation is found in the fact that St Molling was actually famed as a scribe. Keating, writing in 1630,<sup>5</sup> tells us that "when the Senchas had been purified, the Irish nobles decreed that it should be given into the charge of the prelates of the Irish Church. These prelates gave orders to have it copied out in their principal churches. Some of the old books so written, or rescripts of them, survive to the present day, such as the Book of Armagh, the Psalter of Cashel, the Book of Glendaloch, the Book of Ua Congbala, the Book of Clonmacnois, the Book of Fintann of Chuain Aidnech, the Yellow Book of Moling, and the Black Book of Molaga."

The "Yellow Book of Moling" to which he refers, appears, indeed, to have contained a collection of historical documents, and he does not mention a copy of the Gospels as transcribed by him. But it is almost incredible that an eminent Irish scribe of the seventh century should not have written at least one Gospel book, or that Gospels written by the hand of a saint of great renown would not be among the treasures of his own monastery.

<sup>1</sup> An earlier Molling, however, is mentioned in the Book of Leinster, Molling Luath (the swift), son of Fiacha, as distinguished from our Molling Luachra (of Luachair), son of Faelan, *Recue Celtique*, xiii. pp. 45, 101.

<sup>2</sup> *Dict. of National Biog.*, xiii. p. 380.

<sup>3</sup> Vallancey's words, quoted above, p. 2, are sufficient to prove that the contents of the cumdach were the same in 1783 as in 1893.

<sup>4</sup> Mr Warren appears to overlook the importance of this consideration when he writes in the *Academy*, Jan. 26th, 1893, p. 83: "But who is the 'Mulling Scriptor' of this volume? and where was his *civitas*? The proposal to identify him with St Mulling of Ferns (who died 697) . . . must now be finally abandoned."

<sup>5</sup> *History of Ireland*, O'Mahony's translation, p. 412.

It seems, therefore, almost beyond question, that the assertion of the colophon is that the book to which it belonged was written by Daircell or Molling, the celebrated bishop and scribe of the seventh century.

On the other hand, the almost unanimous testimony of palæographers ascribes our manuscript to a later period. M. Berger,<sup>1</sup> than whom no one is more competent to give judgment, refers it to the ninth, and apparently not to the beginning of the ninth century. Others assign to it a slightly earlier date;<sup>2</sup> but all agree in placing it at least a century after the time of St Molling.

It may, of course, be urged that one of the most difficult problems of palæography is the determination of the dates of Irish manuscripts.<sup>3</sup> Irish scribes appear to have been strongly conservative, and to have closely imitated older forms of writing and ornament. But, though this fact may move us to push back the date of the manuscript by a few decades, we can hardly place it within the lifetime of Molling if we are to be guided by palæography at all.

The evidence, therefore, of palæography and that of the colophon appear at first sight to be directly opposed. Is it possible to reconcile them? Or is the problem of our manuscript insoluble? What appears to me to be its true solution is suggested by a paper contributed by Professor T. K. Abbott to *Hermathena* on the colophon of the Book of Durrow.<sup>4</sup> The colophon of this copy of the Gospels states that it was written by one Columba, who has been identified with the Apostle of the Piets († 597).<sup>5</sup> Palæography, on the contrary, pleads for the seventh century.<sup>6</sup> Here is Dr Abbott's way of reconciling the two. The colophon, he says, was copied from the archetype. It contains, therefore, the name of the scribe of the archetype, not of the scribe of the manuscript at the end of which it is now found. The archetype, to which it was originally appended, was therefore written, as the colophon states, in the space of twelve days [and therefore probably "in smaller and more cursive characters" than the Book of Durrow] by a scribe named Columba, who may very well have been the founder of Hy.

It is unnecessary to recapitulate here the arguments by which Professor Abbott seeks to establish this conclusion. To prevent misconception, however, it may be well to say how far, as it appears to me, the inference from them is justified.

The state of the case seems to be this. Reasons of some weight have been given for believing that St Columba could not have written a codex with errors so numerous and of such a kind as are

<sup>1</sup> *L'Histoire de la Vulgate*, p. 34.

<sup>2</sup> Scrivener's *Introduction*, 4th ed., ii. p. 78.

<sup>3</sup> Thompson, *Greek and Latin Palæography*, p. 236 sq.

<sup>4</sup> Vol. viii. p. 199 sqq.

<sup>5</sup> The colophon is given in full in the paper referred to in the text, and also in Professor Abbott's *Evangel. Versio*, p. xix.

<sup>6</sup> Berger, *op cit.*, p. 41. In Scrivener's *Introduction*, 4th ed., ii. 78, it is still described "[end of vi]"; but in an earlier work (*Old Latin Biblical Texts*, iii. p. viii) Mr White had dated it "seventh or eighth century."

found in the Book of Durrow. It has been proved, moreover, that the copy to which the colophon refers must have been written in less elaborate style and in a more cursive character, and that the writer of that copy was named Columba. And finally, arguments falling little short of demonstration have been adduced to show that the colophon was transcribed from another document, which we may reasonably assume to have been that which served as the model for the Gospel text. All this is matter of practical certainty.

But what about the further and most interesting question, Was St Columba the scribe of the archetype to which the colophon belonged? As Dr Abbott truly remarks, there is nothing against this supposition in the fact that the text of the Book of Durrow is Vulgate. St Columba, as he says, may have habitually used an old Latin version, and yet have come across a copy of Jerome's translation and transcribed it for the purposes of private study.<sup>1</sup> We may, in fact, go further, and assert that there is absolutely no direct evidence as to what the version may have been from which St Columba habitually made his quotations. For all that can be proved it may have been just such a text as we find in the Durrow Gospels.

But Professor Abbott really gives us no evidence in favour of the archetype having been penned by St Columba, except the words, "Columbae scriptoris qui hoc scripsi himet (?) euangelium." And he warns us that Columba is a very common name. Thus, as he leaves it, the thesis is "not proven."

Now there is one piece of evidence which he has not mentioned, and which may be thought to tell against the supposition that the Book of Durrow was copied from an autograph of the great saint. It is the wording of the colophon itself: "Rogo beatitudinem tuam sancte praesbiter patrici." Here is a direct invocation of a departed saint. Is it possible that St Columba should have made use of it? It does not seem probable. Less than a century after his death, indeed, such a colophon would not have been surprising. It may be illustrated by several parallels from Adamnan.<sup>2</sup> But if we may judge from the evidence before us, the practice of invoking the departed did not come into vogue till after St Columba had passed away.

Our conclusion then is that the Book of Durrow, including its colophon, is a copy from an earlier codex written by one Columba,<sup>3</sup> whose date cannot with probability be placed earlier than the opening years of the seventh century.

Now, it will be seen that the Book of Mulling presents a problem very similar to that which arises in the case of the Book of Durrow. Palaeography and the colophon are much more certainly at variance

<sup>1</sup> This supposition is confirmed by the very interesting remarks on St Finian of Movilla and the introduction of the Latin Bible into Ireland, which will be found in Miss M. Stokes' *Six Months in the Apennines*. London, 1892, p. 25 *sqq.*

<sup>2</sup> Dowden's *The Celtic Church in Scotland*, pp. 225, 233.

<sup>3</sup> If so, Bishop Reeves' assertion (*Life of St Columba*, p. xiv), "that the colophon in Irish manuscripts is always peculiar to the actual scribe, and likely to be omitted in transcription," is scarcely justified by the facts.

here than in the Durrow Gospels. May not a similar solution be found? True, in our book the colophon bears no mark, on the face of it, that it is not original. But analogy has made it possible that it may have been transcribed from an earlier exemplar. The possibility is converted by palæographical considerations into a strong probability. And if it be once conceded that this is a fact, few will be found to question the identity of Mulling. Our manuscript, in short, will be admitted to have been transcribed, or at least ultimately derived, from an autograph of St Molling of Ferns. St Molling, we may suppose, wrote a copy of the Gospels; a century or more after his death an anonymous scribe made a transcript of this book, including the colophon; and this transcript is the "Book of Mulling" which has survived to the present day.

To this hypothesis I can think of only one objection. It scarcely indeed deserves to be so described, but I must not altogether pass it over. The colophon, as we have already seen, speaks of Mulling's book as consisting of several "volumina." This description applies accurately to the five fasciculi of the present book. If our theory is correct the later scribe must have, in this matter, imitated the *form* of his exemplar as well as copied its text. This in itself presents no difficulty. For we shall find that in the much less striking feature of the division into sections he has strictly adhered to the model of his archetype. But what is here in point is the further fact that he has had some difficulty in confining each Gospel to a single "volumen," and has miscalculated in every case the number of leaves required. What could be easier, it may be urged, if he had before him a manuscript arranged in this particular way, than to estimate beforehand how many sheets of vellum he should assign to each gathering? The answer is, first, that we have no measure of the stupidity, or of the incapacity for arithmetical calculation, of Irish scribes; and, secondly, that the requisite calculation was not very much more difficult if his exemplar was constructed on a different principle. A difference in the size of the pages might, perhaps, confuse him in one case; it may equally have done so in the other. His very determination, notwithstanding all mistakes, to adhere to his design may possibly rather indicate that the arrangement was commended to him, not merely by his own sense of fitness, but by some authority whom he desired to imitate closely. Such an authority would be the founder of his monastery.

### § 3. *The Order of the Gospels.*

It has been already remarked that the colophon is found at the end of St John's Gospel. This furnishes conclusive proof that in the conception of the scribe, St John was, as we are accustomed to regard it, the fourth Gospel. Hereafter reasons will be given for the further belief that the order of the Gospels in his view was identical with that of our modern Bibles, Matthew, Mark, Luke,

John. For the present I content myself with remarking that this fact is one which we have no right to assume without evidence.

It is true, indeed, that only one Irish manuscript is at present known in which the sequence is different. I refer, of course, to the Codex Usserianus, edited by Professor Abbott.<sup>1</sup> This copy exhibits the usual "Western" order, Matthew, John, Luke, Mark. This arrangement appears to have been superseded by the introduction of the Vulgate into Ireland. But there is ground for holding that the older tradition did not give way at once, but that, on the contrary, it exercised considerable influence centuries after the version of St Jerome had gained currency.

This influence comes out very clearly with reference to the evangelical symbols. A little space may be given to the examination of this subject.

The first Christian writer who explains the four forms of the Cherubim in the vision of Ezekiel (i. 10) or the four living creatures of the Apocalypse (iv. 7) as referring to the fourfold Gospel is Irenæus.<sup>2</sup> Each Gospel presents a different aspect of the life of Christ; and accordingly St Matthew is symbolised by the Man, proclaiming as he does the human descent of the Saviour and the humility of his human life; St Mark by the Eagle, which signifies the descent of the Holy Spirit upon the Church, on account of his opening quotation from the prophets, and his prophetic style of writing; St Luke, who begins his narrative with the story of Zacharias the Priest, by the Calf—the sacrificial victim; St John by the Lion, because he dwells upon the kingdom of Christ and opens his record with the statement of His divine generation.

For two centuries we hear no more of speculations of this kind, and then we come upon evidence which appears to show that the exegesis of Irenæus was not generally received. In the fourth and fifth centuries the assignment of the symbols to the several Gospels is discussed by several writers, the most important of whom was Jerome. He accepts the view of Irenæus as to the symbols of the first and third Gospels, but gives the Lion to St Mark and the Eagle to St John. It is worthy of special remark that in this he claims no originality. He discusses no rival theory. He professes to have derived his opinion on this subject from older writers.<sup>3</sup> And these

<sup>1</sup> *Evangeliorum Versio Antichronymiana ex Codice Usseriano (Dublinensi)* etc., Dublin, 1884.

<sup>2</sup> Irenæus, *Adv. Hær.*, III. xi. 8 (Harvey, ii. p. 48).

<sup>3</sup> "Quidam quattuor evangelia, quos nos quoque in præmio commentariorum Matthæi sequuti sumus, horum animalium putant nominibus designari," Vallasius, v. 9, 10. This sentence is sufficient to disprove the statement made in the *Dictionary of Christian Antiquities*, s.v. "Evangelists," i. p. 633: "Nor was it till long after the four creatures had been taken as prefiguring the four evangelists, that a special application was made of each symbol to each writer. This may be referred to St Jerome on Ezekiel i." It is strange that the writer of the article should have overlooked, not only the words which we have quoted, but the evidence of Irenæus and that of Ambrose and Augustine.

writers, he tells us, had stated their views quite definitely.<sup>1</sup> St Matthew is denoted by the Man, because he commences his Gospel with the human genealogy of Christ; St Mark is symbolised by the Lion, because at the beginning of his Gospel he speaks of the voice crying in the wilderness (in quo vox leonis in eremo rugientis auditur: "Vox clamantis in deserto," etc.); St Luke brings us back to Zachariah the priest, and accordingly to him the Calf is appropriate; St John, taking a higher flight than the rest, proclaims "In the beginning was the Word," he, therefore, is the Eagle (qui assumtis pennis aquilæ, et ad altiora festinans, de Verbo Dei disputat). In the age preceding Jerome and the Vulgate we see that the four symbols were allotted, one to each of the evangelists, and that in the manner to which Jerome himself gave the weight of his authority.

But the witness of Jerome does not stand alone. The language of his contemporary, Ambrose of Milan,<sup>2</sup> is not indeed free from ambiguity, except when he speaks of St Matthew and St Luke, about whom we have hitherto found no difference of opinion. Having expressed his own belief as to the symbols of these Gospels, he goes on to state the accepted opinion.<sup>3</sup> And here it is that his meaning is less clear. His language with reference to the Gospel to which the Lion is to be assigned suggests rather St John than St Mark. "Alius," he says, "a potentie cœpit expressione divinæ, quod ex Rege Rex, fortis ex forti, verus ex vero, vivida mortem virtute contempserit." But that St Mark and not St John is intended, is made sufficiently plain by what he says about the meaning of the Eagle. Christ, according to most interpreters, he declares, is the Eagle, because He is the resurrection. And then he proceeds, "Quartus (sc. liber) copiosius cæteris divinæ miracula resurrectionis expressit." These words apply to the Gospel according to St John, and to it alone of the four.<sup>4</sup>

Jerome, then, and others whom he followed, Ambrose and the majority of interpreters known to him, were of one mind. The Man belonged to St Matthew, the Lion to St Mark, the Calf to St Luke, and the Eagle to St John. This was, it would seem, the prevalent view in the middle of the fourth century.<sup>5</sup>

It is not necessary to cite more than one other literary witness. That witness is Augustine of Hippo. He writes as follows<sup>6</sup>:—

<sup>1</sup> *Com. in Ezek.*, i. (Vallarsius, v. 9, 10, 13); *Com. in Matt. Proem.* (Vallarsius, vii. 5, 6); *Adv. Jovinianum*, i. 26 (Vallarsius, ii. 280).

<sup>2</sup> *Expositio Evang. Sec. Lucam*, Præf., 7, 8 (Migne, xv. 1532).

<sup>3</sup> *Plerique tamen putant*, etc.

<sup>4</sup> It ought, however, to be mentioned that in later times St Mark was regarded as especially the evangelist of the resurrection, and that this was one of the reasons given for the appropriateness to him of the symbol of the Lion. Durandus, *Rationale*, vii. 44, 4.

<sup>5</sup> Juvenius, the Spanish Presbyter, has indeed been cited as adhering to the opinion of Irenæus. But the verses in which his views have been supposed to be expressed, and of which more hereafter, are spurious. This is shown by Marold in his edition of Juvenius (Leipzig, 1886), p. vii. sq., and by Huemer in the twenty-fourth volume of the Vienna *Corpus*, p. xxiv sq.

<sup>6</sup> *De Consensu Evangelistarum*, l. vi. (9. (Migne, xxxiv. 1016).

"Unde mihi videntur, qui ex Apocalypsi illa quatuor animalia ad intelligendos quatuor Evangelistas interpretati sunt, probabilius aliquid attendisse illi qui leonem in Matthæo, hominem in Marco, vitulum in Luca, aquilam in Joanne intellexerunt, quam illi qui hominem Matthæo, aquilam Marco, leonem Joanni tribuerunt. De principiis enim librorum quandam conjecturam capere voluerunt, non de tota intentione Evangelistarum, quæ magis fuerat perscrutanda," etc.

St Augustine here mentions two views of the symbols—his own, which agrees with that of Jerome as regards the third and fourth Gospels, and another which is identical with that of Irenæus.<sup>1</sup> Taken literally, his language implies that each of these opinions had supporters in his own or a previous age. But the forms of literary speech must not be pressed too strictly. It seems at least as likely that he was simply controverting (and, we must add, not very fairly<sup>2</sup>) the interpretation of Irenæus, and maintaining his own private gloss.<sup>3</sup> If he had meant to review the main opinions current on the subject, it is inconceivable that he should have passed over that held by Ambrose and Jerome, of which he cannot have been ignorant.

On the whole, the evidence before us is sufficient to convince us that the majority of fourth-century divines were, in this matter, in agreement with Jerome. And our conclusion is corroborated from an unexpected quarter. A small bronze coin, of uncertain *provenance*, which has been assigned to the time of Justinian, is described and figured by various writers.<sup>4</sup> On one side it has, to the left, the head of a man; on the right, that of an eagle, each surmounted by a star, the two figures being separated by a cross. Underneath are the words, in characters half Greek, half Latin:—

### Ν Α Θ Ε Ο C Ι Ο Η Α Ν Ν Ι S

On the other side, similarly disposed, are the heads of a lion and

<sup>1</sup> It is curious to find Mr J. R. Allen, in a passage in which he actually refers to St Augustine (*Christian Symbolism*, p. 265), affirming: "In the first instance the application of the symbolic beasts to the Four Evangelists was general . . . but we have evidence in the Fathers of the fourth century of their being individualised. There appears, however, to have been a difference of opinion as to the appropriation of the symbols of St Matthew and St Mark, *although there is none with regard to the other two Evangelists.*" Like some other writers on the subject, he appears to have been unaware of the passage in which Irenæus discusses the symbols.

<sup>2</sup> For Irenæus does not confine himself to observing the opening words of the Gospels. Of St Matthew he writes: "Propter hoc et per totum evangelium humiliter sentiens et mitis homo servatus est"; and of St Mark, διὰ τοῦτο δὲ καὶ σύντομον καὶ παρatreχούσαν τὴν καταγγελίαν πεποιήται· προφητικὸς γὰρ ὁ χαρακτὴρ αὐτός.

<sup>3</sup> So Westcott appears to understand him, *Introduction to the Study of the Gospels*, 4th ed., p. 245, note 2.

<sup>4</sup> P. M. Paeiaudi, *De Cultu S. Johannis Baptistæ*, etc., Rome, 1755, p. 162; Minter, *Sinnbilder d. Alten Christen*, Altona, 1825, i. p. 45 and pl. i. fig. 15. See also Louisa Twining, *Symbols and Emblems of Early and Medieval Christian Art*, London, 1852, p. 92 (pl. xlv. fig. 10); *Dict. of Christ. Ant.*, i. 634.



an ox, and beneath them  $\begin{smallmatrix} N & A & P & C \\ L & V & C & A^s \end{smallmatrix}$ , while to the left of the lion's head is the letter V, and to the right of the ox's head the letter S. The designer of the coin, whoever he may have been, had not come under the influence of the great Italian doctor: his semi-Greek letters, and his adoption of the "Western" order of the Gospels, may suffice to produce conviction on that point. It is no less clear that he allotted the symbols to the evangelists in the way which received the imprimatur of Jerome and the later Western Church.

This, then, was probably the tradition which was imported into Ireland when St Patrick and his successors brought thither the pre-hieronymian Latin version of the Holy Scriptures. We shall not be held to make a very violent assumption if we suppose that in Ireland, in the days when this Old Latin version was still current, the symbols were represented in the Gospel books, placed each in immediate connection with its own Gospel. But since the order of the Gospels was then Matthew, John, Luke, Mark, the order of the symbols must have been Man, Eagle, Ox, Lion. Let us suggest another hypothesis, which may, perhaps, seem a little more daring. Suppose that a scribe copied his text from a Vulgate, and the illuminator who completed his work copied his symbols (and it is certainly unlikely that they were, in the majority of cases, altogether original compositions) from an Old Latin exemplar, without observing the transposition in the text of the second and fourth Gospels. In such a case the result would be a manuscript in which the following order was presented:—

1. Miniature of a Man.
2. Gospel of St Matthew.
3. Miniature of an Eagle.
4. Gospel of St Mark.
5. Miniature of an Ox.
6. Gospel of St Luke.
7. Miniature of a Lion.
8. Gospel of St John.

The hypothesis, after all, scarcely deserves to be so called. This is, in fact, the order which obtains in the Book of Durrow.<sup>1</sup> And I do not know what explanation of the fact can be given, except the one which I have ventured to suggest—that the text was taken from a manuscript with a Vulgate text (as it certainly was), and the

<sup>1</sup> "These emblems of the evangelists," writes Bishop Westcott (*Introduction to Study of Gospels*, p. 245), "are not found [*i.e.*, apparently in artistic representation] before the Mosaics of the 15th century." Can "15th" be a misprint for "5th"? Otherwise the statement is incomprehensible. Representations are found in Biblical manuscripts such as the Book of Durrow, in metal work (*e.g.*, the shrine of St Molaise's Gospels in the Museum of the Royal Irish Academy), and in architectural ornament from the seventh century onwards, and perhaps from an earlier period. See Mrs Jameson, *Sacred and Legendary Art*, 7th ed. (1874), vol. i. p. 133; L. Twining, *Symbols and Emblems*, pp. 90, 92; Garrucci, *Storia dell' Arte Cristiana*, vi. pl. 425.

illuminated pages from one with an Old Latin text. It might perhaps be thought that the explanation is rather to be found in the vagaries of a binder who has misplaced some of the leaves. But this is easily put out of court. The scribe has left sufficient guidance for the binder, and it has been followed. On the recto of the leaf, the verso of which is occupied with the Lion, the words are written in vermillion: "Explicit euangelium saccundum Lucam, incipit saccundum iohannem." One thing is clear, and it strongly confirms our theory, that if the archetype of the Durrow text was an autograph of St Columba (or, indeed, of anyone else), executed in twelve days,<sup>1</sup> that archetype could not have been adorned with elaborate pictorial representations. The illuminator must have gone elsewhere for suggestions. And why not to what may well have been near at hand, an Old Latin manuscript?<sup>2</sup>

It seems, moreover, quite clear that the Book of Durrow was no solitary example of the confusion between the symbols of St Mark and St John. It became, in the course of time, so common to place the Eagle before St Mark's Gospel, and the Lion before St John, that men forgot that this collocation had its root in a confusion. It came to be the accepted arrangement, with some at least, and reasons were given (quite as good, one doubts not, as those of Jerome for the other view) why the Lion was appropriate to St John, and the Eagle to St Mark.

Before giving proof of this assertion, we may remind our readers that in early Latin manuscripts are sometimes found verses in which the evangelists are commemorated in connection with their symbols. Not the least common of these are the following, which were composed by Sedulius<sup>3</sup> in the fifth century:—

Hoc Mattheus agens hominem generaliter implet,  
 Marcus ut alta fremit uox per deserta leonis,  
 Iura sacerdotis Lucas tenet ore iuueni,  
 More uolans aquilæ uerbo petit astra Ioannes.

<sup>1</sup> See Abbott, "On the Colophon of the Book of Durrow" (*Hermathena*, viii. 199), above, p. 15.

<sup>2</sup> A patriotic Scotsman, named John Forrest, published in the year 1701 an edition of the works of Sedulius, moved thereto apparently by the supposition that the author of the *Carmen Paschale* was Sedulius *Scotus*, and that the latter cognomen proved him to be a native of North Britain! In one of his notes (p. 20) he declares, "Græci Marco aquilam, Ioanni Leonem tribuunt," a statement which may suggest to those who are fond of referring everything in the early Irish Church to an Eastern source a different origin for the phenomena of the Book of Durrow from that which I have proposed. But no proof of the assertion is given, nor have I succeeded in finding any.

<sup>3</sup> *Carmen Paschale*, i. 355-358. The lines are found in at least two British Museum MSS., Add. 11,848 (9th century); Cott. Tib., A. II. (early 10th century). We shall shortly have occasion to quote a similar set of verses from an Irish codex. Compare also those cited from the "Gospels of Beneventum" below, p. 16. The verses are also inscribed on scrolls on an ancient baptistery at Cividale, in Frioul (Garrucci, *ubi sup.*). See also Ciampini, *Fœdera Monumenta*, Rome, 1690, i. p. 135.

It is quite obvious to remark that such verses are not likely to be found in any considerable number of manuscripts unless the tradition which they embody was of old standing and widespread.

And now, this inference being accepted, for our proof of the statement made on the last page. The verses just cited connect the evangelists and the symbols in the orthodox and approved fashion. But there are rival lines. About the same time that some of the manuscripts containing the verses of Sedulius just cited were written, an Irish scribe, MacRegol by name (said to have been an abbot of Birr, King's County, Ireland, †820), wrote a book which now rests on the shelves of the Bodleian Library (Auct. D. 2, 19). It is known as the Rushworth Gospels. MacRegol also gives us mnemonic lines on the symbols,<sup>1</sup>

Matheus instituit uirtutum tramite moras  
bene uiuendi iusto dedit ordine leges

Marcus amat terras inter celumque uolare  
et uehymens aquila stricto secat omnia labso

Lucas uberius descripsit proelia christi  
iure sacrato uitululus quia uatum moenia fatur

Johannis fremit ore leo similisque rudenti  
intonat intonate terne pandens misteria uite

We recognise at once a faulty transcript of lines, by some editors attributed to Juvenius, and printed as a first preface to his *Historia Evangelica*.<sup>2</sup> St Mark appears as the Eagle, St John as the Lion, in full agreement with the Book of Durrow. The lines can scarcely have been introduced in this Gospel book merely as an idle embellishment. They point rather to an actual tradition as to the arrangement of the symbols in ancient Irish manuscripts. And this tradition must have been of long standing in the early years of the ninth century. For let us notice that the tradition was, as far as MacRegol was concerned, already dead. There is nothing in the Rushworth Gospels which corresponds to the lines, or which could have suggested their use. The portrait of St Mark is surmounted by a winged Lion,<sup>3</sup> that of St John by an Eagle,<sup>4</sup> and in the latter case, to make assurance doubly sure, the word "iohannis" is written across the figure. The Eagle appears once more in the decoration of the opening page of the fourth Gospel.

It was impossible that these verses should remain long unaltered in such alien surroundings. A century later we find their form slightly, but significantly, changed. The tenth century Irish Gospels

<sup>1</sup> Gilbert, *National MSS. of Ireland*, Pt. i. pl. xxiv.

<sup>2</sup> See above, p. 19, note 5.

<sup>3</sup> Westwood, *Anglo-Saxon Manuscripts*, p. 54.

<sup>4</sup> *Ib.*, pl. xvi.

of MacDurnan are one of the treasures of Lambeth Palace Library. Here again the conventional symbols are represented. The first page of St Mark has an unmistakable Lion's head in the top right-hand corner of the decorated border,<sup>1</sup> and another in the centre of the page, while on the verso of the last leaf of St Matthew "is the winged Lion, with head not unlike that of a sheep," as Mr Westwood informs us.<sup>2</sup> These facts are conclusive, both as to the order of the Gospels, and as to the symbol assigned to each. Now over what was originally the outside leaf of the manuscript, another leaf is pasted, on which are written the following lines in a modern hand :—

Hoc Mattheus agens hominem generaliter implet  
 Marcus ut alta fremit vox per deserta leonis  
 Jura sacerdotis Lucas tenet ore juveni  
 More volans aquile verbo petit astra Johannes  
 Mattheus instituit virtutum tramite mores  
 Et bene vivendi justo dedit ordine legem  
 Marcus amat terras inter cœlumque volare  
 Atque volans aquila stricto secat omnia lapsu  
 Lucas uberius describit prelia Christi  
 Jure sacer vitulus qui menia fatur auita.

These verses Mr Westwood supposes to have been copied from the page over which they are pasted. And this seems highly probable, the more so as on the verso are found the four symbols to which they refer. Now let us look at them more closely. In the first four lines we have another copy of the verses of Sedulius. The last six are old friends. They are the lines ascribed to Juvenius which we have just now found in the Rushworth Gospels. But we observe one important difference. The final lines on St John have disappeared. What has become of them? They were illegible, says Mr Westwood, in the exemplar from which our modern scribe copied, and which he has so carefully concealed from us.<sup>3</sup> One is tempted to offer a different account of the matter. They were not written, we should say, by the seventeenth-century scribe, because they did not exist in the writing of his tenth-century predecessor. And why omitted by him? Because they were distinctly at variance with the tradition which he held. When they were withdrawn, the lines, with a little forcing, were easily squared with the accepted view. Lions, as we know them, are not, it is true, accustomed "terras inter cœlumque volare": but what may not a winged lion of the very rare species found in Irish manuscripts do? Line 7, therefore, applies well enough to St Mark and his lion. Line 8 is excellent for St John. And so, by the omission of lines 11, 12, all is made right.

It may be urged that we have done violence to the seventh and

<sup>1</sup> Westwood, *Anglo-Saxon MSS.*, pl. xxii.

<sup>2</sup> *Pal. Sac.*, "Gospels of Máel Brith MacDurnan," p. 12.

<sup>3</sup> *Anglo-Saxon MSS.*, p. 69; *Pal. Sac.*, "Gospels of Máel Brith MacDurnan," p. 8.

eighth lines by giving them this strained interpretation. No doubt we have. But it is plain that, if the verses relating to St John were omitted, some strange method of interpretation must have been used by those who regarded the remainder as a description of the four symbols. And that MacDurnan was not singular in giving them in this incomplete form we have sufficient proof. Witness the eighth century manuscript<sup>1</sup> known as the Gospels of St Boniface, preserved at Fulda, in which they run as follows<sup>2</sup> :—

Mathius instituit virtutum tramite mores,  
Et bene vivendi justo dedit ordine leges.  
Marcus amat terras inter coelumque volare.  
Et vehemens aquila stricto secat omnia lapsu.  
Jure sacer vitulus, qui habitat moenia Patris ;  
Lucas uberius describit proelia Christi.

It will not be maintained that in this manuscript, as well as in the Gospels of MacDurnan, the last two lines were omitted because they were illegible in the exemplar.

We may refer briefly, in the last place, to another manuscript, which contains the lines of Ps.-Juvenecus, the celebrated Codex Sangermanensis.<sup>3</sup> This Bible was not penned by an Irish scribe. It is French in origin, having been written, according to M. Berger, in the neighbourhood of Lyons. But manifold traces exist, in its Gospel text, of Irish influence. Possibly from an Irish source came the lines in question, which were, in all likelihood, in the exemplar, accompanied by drawings of the evangelical symbols. The manuscript itself is almost entirely devoid of ornament. The first four of our verses are found immediately before the opening words of St Mark's Gospel, the fifth and sixth before St Luke, the remaining two before St John. As in most of the other cases which we have examined, they are altered in such a way as to adapt them to the customary allocation of the symbols. But the process by which this

<sup>1</sup> Mr H. J. White kindly informs me that, judging from Schannat's facsimile, this was probably the date of the codex. The scribe, Vidrug by name, was apparently a companion of St Boniface († 755).

<sup>2</sup> Schannat, *Vindemiæ Literariæ Fuldæ et Lipsiæ* 1723 p. 224 sqq. Westwood (*Anglo-Saxon MSS.* p. 55), who does not appear to have seen the manuscript, commits a curious blunder with reference to these lines. He implies that they occur twice in the Fulda Gospels, in slightly different forms. But the first set of verses which he quotes, are simply a mis-reading of the lines by Brower, which Schannat cites for the purpose of correcting it. Brower's punctuation (as Schannat represents it) is a proof that strained exegesis was not confined to Irish scribes :

Matheus, instituit virtutum tramite mores,  
Et bene vivendi justo dedit ordine leges  
Marcus. Amat terras inter coelumque volantem  
Joannes aquilam. Sancto regit omnia lapsu  
Lucas, uberius describit proelia Christi.

<sup>3</sup> My knowledge of this manuscript (*g*<sub>1</sub> : Paris, B.N. 11,553) is derived from Bishop Wordsworth's *Old Latin Biblical Texts*, No. I., and from Berger's *Histoire de la Vulgate*, pp. 65-72.

is accomplished is different from that which we have observed elsewhere. The names of the second and fourth evangelists are interchanged, and the lines referring to them transposed, the verses being otherwise unaltered except by mistakes of the transcriber. These facts point to the inference that one of the Irish ancestors of the codex was a manuscript with the symbols arranged as in the Book of Durrow. That is to say, either its Gospels followed the Vulgate order, while the symbols adhered to that of the Old Latin, or, more probably, the order of the Gospels was "Western," that of the symbols Vulgate. The lines in the Saint Germain manuscript run as follows :—

Mattheus instituit uirtutum tramite mores  
Et bene uiuendi iusto dedit ordine legis

Marcus fremit ore leo similisque rudenti  
Intonaet eternae pandens misteria uitae

Lucas uberius describit proelia xpi  
Iure sacer uitululus quia uatum munia fatur

Ioannes amat terras intra caelumque uolare.  
Et uehemens aquila stricto secat omnia lapsu.<sup>1</sup>

The evidence passed under review will have demonstrated, if I mistake not, that at one time there must have existed a large number of Irish manuscripts in which, while the text followed the Vulgate order, the symbols adhered to that of the older versions. The old and the new sequence were thus brought into direct conflict. The conflict could only issue in one or other of three results.

1. The tradition as to the connection between the evangelists and their symbols might give way, and the accidental juxtaposition of St John with the Lion and St Mark with the Eagle become permanent, and be transformed into a new tradition. This, as we have seen, did to a certain extent actually happen.

<sup>1</sup> I think it better to give in a footnote than in the text the apparently unique verses found in the so-called Gospels of Beneuentum (century viii. or ix., Brit. Mus., Add. 5463). Whether or not M. Berger is right in his contention (*L'Histoire*, p. 91 sq.) that this is a French codex, it is certain that it bears marks, in its readings, of Irish influence. The following lines, extracted from it, are plainly founded on those of Sedulius. But some of the words (I have printed them in italics) are not derived from this source. They are inappropriate as they stand, and bear witness, as I cannot doubt, to the influence of the rival theory of the symbols upon the scribe :—

Primus Mattheus hominem generaliter implens  
Marcus leonis uocem *rugiens intonans celsae*  
Iure Lucas tenet sacerdotii simulque more iuueni  
Iohannes instar aquilae uolans in principio *intonans* uerbum.

"Rugiens intonans" in line 2 may, perhaps, recall "*rugienti intonat*" in Ps.-Juvenius; the more readily since neither verb occurs in the lines of Sedulius.

2. The older tradition as to the appropriation of the symbols might remain. In this case it is natural to suppose that the order of the symbols would give way to that of the Gospels themselves, and so there would ensue a complete victory for the Vulgate. This we know to have taken place in the great majority of Irish Gospel manuscripts now remaining. But another alternative is possible, though less probable. For

3. The order of the Gospels might have been altered to suit that of the symbols, and thus, so far as arrangement is concerned, the victory would lie with the Old Latin. This possibility is sufficient to make us pause before assuming without examination that the order of the Gospels in a given Irish manuscript is identical with that of Jerome's Vulgate.

But an objection may be made. If the arrangement of the Book of Durrow was not altogether exceptional, why is this copy the only one now known in which it is found? And if the possibility just suggested is one that ought seriously to be reckoned with, why has no single Irish Vulgate manuscript been reported in which the Gospels follow the older sequence?

In answering these questions, let us call to mind that very few indeed of the extant Irish manuscripts date further back than the ninth or perhaps the eighth century. The Book of Durrow is the earliest which we possess, and can scarcely be put later than the closing years of the seventh century.<sup>1</sup> In other words, all other copies belong to a period when the victory for the Vulgate had been practically won. The strange thing really is, that traces of the contest should remain in their pages even so late as the tenth century. Had we a few more Vulgate manuscripts ranging from the sixth to the eighth century, we should probably find others exhibiting the same phenomenon in the matter of the symbols as the Book of Durrow.

But even late copies are not without traces of the older arrangement in their illuminations. We may be allowed to mention two cases in point. Wattenbach describes a copy of the Gospels now deposited in the German museum at Nuremberg, but belonging to the library of the Princes of Oettingen-Wallerstein at Möttingen.<sup>2</sup> It is written in half-uncials of unmistakably Irish character, and is ascribed by Wattenbach to the seventh, if not to the sixth, century.<sup>3</sup> Now the last page of this manuscript has, above the versified colophon, a rude miniature of a lion, surmounted by the words (probably a more recent addition), "Ecce leo stat super evangelium." It does not appear from the description whether St John's Gospel ends on this or the preceding page. But in either case the picture

<sup>1</sup> Scrivener, *Introduction to Criticism of N. T.*, 4th ed., ii. 78; Berger, *Histoire de la Vulgate*, p. 41.

<sup>2</sup> Wattenbach's account of this manuscript appeared in the *Anzeiger für Kunde des Deutschen Vorzeit* (Oct. 1869), and in the *Revue Celtique*, i. p. 27 sqq.

<sup>3</sup> The reader may perhaps suspect that this date is somewhat too early.

may be assumed to be connected with that Gospel, and to be a reminiscence of the days when the lion was regarded as the appropriate symbol of St John. And this, although in the Möttingen MS. the Gospels follow the now usual order, and although inscribed on the verso of the first leaf it has verses which begin thus:—

Quam in speciosa quadriga,  
Homo, leo, vitulus et aquila.

Our second example shall be an early ninth-century manuscript first made known to students of the Vulgate by M. Samuel Berger,<sup>1</sup> the Book of the Confraternities of Pfäfers. It contains extracts from the Gospels, for reading in the ecclesiastical offices, in an Irish text. The ornamentation is also in part Irish. Each Gospel has its symbol, but the Lion of St Mark is distinguished by having two eagles below it. It is right to add, however, that the origin of these eagles may be merely the fancy of an illuminator desirous of producing a page more richly adorned than usual. The Calf of St Luke, for example, has in like manner below it two lions; and the symbols of all four evangelists are surmounted by figures of animals which have no appearance of being symbolic.

But further, if most of our copies were probably *written* not before the eighth century, they have certainly all been *bound* at a more recent date.<sup>2</sup> And binders have little scruple in following their own whims as to the arrangement of the leaves of the books which are left to their mercy. The binders of our Irish codices knew no order of the Gospels, and no system of arranging the symbols, but one: and we need scarcely doubt that in their hands the manuscripts would, as far as possible, be made to suit it. Not much ingenuity would be required if the several Gospels were written in separate fasciculi and the symbols on detached leaves, one side of which was left blank. This may possibly have been not so uncommon as one might imagine.<sup>3</sup>

And finally, if scribes and binders were biassed by the tradition of later centuries, no less so are modern palæographers. There is scarcely any instance in which the "make-up" of Irish manuscripts, of which descriptions have been published, has been examined with care, in order to discover whether the binder has adhered to the intention of the original scribe as to the order of the books and the position of the illuminated symbols. And even where the arrangement as it now exists is exceptional, the prevailing tradition has been strong enough to blind the eyes of observers to the anomaly. To take but one instance. Mr Westwood no doubt examined the Book of Durrow with much care. Yet in his *Palæographia Sacra*, though he refers to the symbols, he never mentions that they are

<sup>1</sup> *L'Histoire de la Vulgate*, pp. 57 sq., 419.

<sup>2</sup> "Les anciens Irlandais ne paraissent pas avoir connu l'art de la reliure," Berger, *Histoire de la Vulgate*, p. 34.

<sup>3</sup> See above, p. 13.



misplaced. In his *Anglo-Saxon Manuscripts* he goes further. The symbol which in the manuscript precedes St John is spoken of (p. 21) as the "Lion of St Mark,"<sup>1</sup> and when (pls. iv., v.) reproductions are given of the Man, the Lion, the Ox, and the Eagle, the two former are described as the "symbols of St Matthew *and* St Mark," the two latter as those "of St Luke *and* St John." This is a warning not to accept, without examination, the statements of palæographers on such matters as those which are now before us. We may well suspect that a more careful scrutiny will bring to light in our libraries Irish Gospels, in which the order of either symbols or evangelists is different from that which is now received.

But some who have followed me thus far may now protest, You have caused us to wade through pages of argument, and at the end we are treated to an exhortation to caution and accuracy, which has no very close relation to the Book of Mulling. Benevolent reader, the charge is true. I crave pardon, and hasten to another subject whose relevance is indubitable. That the labour expended on the last few pages has not been altogether in vain may perhaps appear in the sequel.

<sup>1</sup> Compare also J. Romilly Allen. *Early Christian Symbolism in Great Britain and Ireland before the Thirteenth Century*, London, 1887, p. 383.

## CHAPTER III.

## THE SECTIONS.

M. BERGER has more than once<sup>1</sup> directed the attention of students of the Vulgate to the importance of certain accessories to the Biblical text found in many manuscripts. Among these are what he calls the "Summaries" (*sommaires*) of the Gospels, more usually known as *capitula* or *breves causæ*, which appear to have taken their origin in very early times from the lectionary system of the Western Church.

The Book of Mulling has no summaries. But in it the Synoptic Gospels, and to a certain extent St John also, are divided as originally written<sup>2</sup> into paragraphs or sections. It is the purpose of the present chapter to investigate the nature of these sections. The inquiry may be thought to be trivial; and to remove this impression it will be well to state at once the conclusion to which it leads us in the case of the Gospels of St Matthew and St Luke. The sections of these Gospels are not mere arbitrary divisions of the scribe: they will be found to have been, at least approximately, reproduced by him from his exemplar, and to correspond pretty closely to the divisions marked in the Book of Durrow and Ussher's manuscript, which in the main agree with the *capitulatio* of the Gospels preserved in the Books of Durrow and Kells, and elsewhere.

The easiest way to make good this assertion in the case of St Luke's Gospel is to place in parallel columns the beginnings of the sections in the Books of Mulling and Durrow and Ussher's Codex. The striking agreement between the three systems of division will thus immediately appear. Only those sections of the Book of Durrow which are numbered are represented in the table, and each is accompanied by the number which appears opposite it in the manuscript—similarly the numbers in Ussher's manuscript are added whenever they are legible.<sup>3</sup> In the left column are given the numbers of the

<sup>1</sup> *Revue Celtique*, vi. 356; *L'Histoire de la Vulgate*, pp. 307 *sqq.*, 343 *sqq.*

<sup>2</sup> The corrector of the manuscript has adopted a different system of division, as we shall see hereafter. With this we are not concerned in the present chapter.

<sup>3</sup> The numbers given are those of the first hand. They have been altered by a corrector as follows. The indication of the beginning of the section (iii. 1) which should have been numbered v. was omitted. Hence two consecutive sections were numbered respectively iv. and vi. This had the appearance of a blunder, which was remedied by depressing the sectional numbers above vi. (not apparently, however, vi. itself) by one. Similarly §§ 9, 10 were written together, the next section being numbered xi. Hence the numbers from xi. onwards were depressed by *two*. A

corresponding capitula as found in the summary in the Book of Durrow. The explanation of the asterisks and obeli I reserve for the present. The table, it is hoped, independently of its more immediate purpose, may prove useful to those who are engaged in studying the ancient sections of the Gospels.

CAPITULA.	BOOK OF MULLING.	BOOK OF DURROW.	COD. EXETERIANUS.
[I.]	* i. 1. * i. 5. i. 19. † i. 20. i. 23. † i. 34. i. 46. i. 56. i. 59. † i. 68. * ii. 1. * ii. 21. ii. 25. ii. 36. ii. 38.		i. 1. i. 5.
II.	{		I[II.] (? <i>ms.</i> ) ii. 1. ii. 21.
III.			
IIII.		IIII. ii. 42.	IIII. ( <i>ms.</i> ) ii. 42. ii. 43. "Et dixit" (?)
V.	* iii. 1. iii. 3. iii. 7. iii. 10. † iii. 16. "Ego." † iii. 17. iii. 19. * iii. 21. * iv. 1. iv. 14.	V. iii. 1.	
VI.	{	VI. iii. 21.	VI. iii. 21. iv. 1.
VII.	{	VII. iv. 16.	VII. iv. 16.
VIII.	{	VIII. iv. 33.	VIII. iv. 31.
VIII.	* iv. 33. iv. 38. iv. 41. iv. 42. * v. 1. v. 4. v. 10. "Et dixit."	VIII. v. 1.	VIII. v. 1.
X.	* v. 12. v. 15.		
XI.	* v. 17. v. 13.	XI. v. 17.	XI. v. 17.
XII.	* v. 27. v. 36.	XII. v. 27.	v. 27.
XIII.	* vi. 1.	XIII. vi. 1.	XIII. vi. 1.
XIII.	* vi. 6.		
XV.	† vi. 20. "Beati." † vi. 21. † vi. 21. "Beati" <i>sec.</i> † vi. 22. vi. 39.	XIII. vi. 13.	vi. 12.
XVI.	{		
XVII.		XV. vi. 41.	XV. vi. 41. XVI. vii. 1.
XVIII.	* vii. 1. † vii. 9. "Amen."		
XVIII.		XVII. vii. 11. XVIII. vii. 18.	XVII. vii. 11. XVIII. vii. 19.
XX.	† vii. 28. vii. 31. * vii. 36.	XVIII. vii. 36.	XVIII. vii. 36.

few numbers seem to have been overlooked by the corrector, and in at least two instances three instead of two has been subtracted (Abbott, pp. 603, 613). Dr Abbott's account of this, though substantially correct, is expressed in terms somewhat too general (p. iv).

CAPITULA.	BOOK OF MULLING.	BOOK OF DURROW.	CODEx USSERIANUS.
XXI.	* viii. 1. viii. 4. viii. 11. viii. 16. * viii. 22.	XX. viii. 1.	XX. viii. 1.
XXII.		XXI. viii. 22.	XXI. viii. 22.
XXIII.	viii. 32. viii. 37. "ipse."	XXII. viii. 26.	XXII. viii. 26.
XXIII.	* viii. 40. viii. 42. "Et."	XXIII. viii. 40.	XXIII. viii. 40.
XXV.	ix. 6.	XXIII. ix. 1.	X[XXIII.] ix. 1.
XXVI.	ix. 12.	XXV. ix. 10.	XXV. ix. 10.
XXVII.	* ix. 18. ix. 21. <sup>1</sup>	XXVI. ix. 18.	
	ix. 33. * ix. 37.		XXVI. ix. 28.
XXVIII.		XXVII. ix. 37.	XX[VII.] ix. 37.
XXVIII.	* ix. 57.	XXVIII. ix. 51.	XXVIII. ix. 51.
XXX.	† x. 7. "Dignus." x. 10. x. 16. * x. 17.	XXVIII. ix. 57. XXX. x. 1.	XXVIII. ix. 57. x. 1. <sup>2</sup>
XXXI.			
XXXII.	* x. 25. † x. 28. x. 31.	XXXI. x. 21. XXXII. x. 25.	XXXI. x. 17. XXXII. x. 25.
XXXIII.	* x. 38.	XXXIII. x. 38.	x. 38.
XXXIII.	* xi. 2. "Pater." xi. 5. xi. 9. xi. 11.	XXXIII. xi. 1.	XXXIII. xi. 1.
XXXV.			
XXXVI.	* xi. 27.	XXXV. xi. 14.	XXXV. xi. 14.
XXXVII.	xi. 35.		XXXVI. xi. 27.
XXXVIII.		XXXVI. xi. 37.	XXXVII. xi. 37. xi. 43.
XXXVIII.	* xi. 44. * xi. 53. xii. 4. xii. 8. <sup>3</sup> xii. 11. xii. 15. xii. 16. * xii. 22. xii. 27.		XXXVIII. xi. 53.
X[L].			
XLI.			
XLII. a.	xii. 40. <sup>4</sup> * xii. 49. xii. 54. † xii. 56.	XL. xii. 13.	XL. xii. 13.
XLIII.			
XLII. b. (xiii. 6).	* xiii. 6. † xiii. 7. "Et ecce."	XXXVIII. (sic ms.) [xii. 32.]	XLI. xii. 32.
XLIII.	* xiii. 10. xiii. 18. <sup>5</sup>		XLII. xii. 49.
XLV.	† xiii. 25. "uos."	XL. xii. 13.	XLIII. xiii. 1.
XLVI.	* xiii. 30.	XLIII. xiii. 10.	XLIII. xiii. 10.
XLVII.	* xiv. 1. xiv. 12. <sup>6</sup>	XLV. xiii. 22.	XLV. xiii. 22.
XLVIII.	* xiv. 25. xiv. 34 (?).	XLVI. (ms.) xiv. 1.	XLVI. xiii. 31. XLVII. xiv. 1.
XLVIII.	* xv. 1. xv. 4 (?).	XLVIII. xiv. 25.	XLVIII. xiv. 25.
	† xv. 6. "Congratu- lamini" (?).	XLVIII. xv. 1.	XLVIII. xv. 1.
L.	* xv. 11. xv. 20. "Cum au- xv. 29. [tem.]"	L. xv. 11.	xv. 11.

<sup>1</sup> Apparently a fresh capitulum begins here (or at v. 23) in the Book of Armagh.

<sup>2</sup> This division does not appear in Dr Abbott's edition. But above the word "hæc" in what he numbers l. 1 (p. 497) are distinctly visible the marks , , indicating the termination of one and the commencement of another section.

<sup>3</sup> Apparently the beginning of a capitulum in the Codex Epternacensis.

<sup>4</sup> A capitulum begins here in the Codex Aureus.

<sup>5</sup> Begins a fresh section in the Codex Epternacensis.

<sup>6</sup> Beginning of a fresh capitulum in the Book of Armagh and the Codex Epternacensis.

CAPITULA.	BOOK OF MULLING.	BOOK OF DURROW.	CODEx USSERIANUS.
LI.	* xvi. 1.	LI. xvi. i.	LI. xvi. 1.
LII.	* xvi. 13.	LII. xvi. 13.	LII. xvi. 13.
LIII.	xvi. 14.		
	* xvi. 19.	LIII. xvi. 19.	LIII. xvi. 19.
LIIII.	† xvi. 1 "Uæ."		
	* xvii. 3.	LIIII. xvii. 3.	LIIII. xvii. 3. "S] autem peccauerit."
	† xvii. 8 "Et post."		
LV.	* xvii. 11.	LV. xvii. 11.	LV. xvii. 11.
LVI.	* xvii. 20.	LVI. xvii. 20.	LVI. xvii. 20.
	xvii. 23. <sup>1</sup>		
	xvii. 34.		
LVII.	* xviii. 1.	LVII. xviii. 1.	LVII. xviii. 1.
LVIII.	* xviii. 9.	LVIII. xviii. 9.	LVII[1]. xviii. 9.
	xviii. 15.		
	† xviii. 17.		
LVIII.	* xviii. 18.		LVIII. xviii. 18.
	xviii. 23.		"Magister."
	* xviii. 31.	LX. xviii. 31.	LX. xviii. 31.
	xviii. 34.		
	* xviii. 35.		
LX.	* xix. 1.	LXI. xix. 1.	LXI. xix. 1.
LXI.	* xix. 11.	LXII. xix. 11.	LXII. xix. 11.
LXII.	xix. 12.		
	† xix. 26.		
LXIII.	* xix. 28.	LXIII. xix. 28.	LXIII. xix. 29.
	xix. 37.		
LXIII.	* xx. 1.	LXIII. xx. 1.	LXIII. xx. 1.
LXV.	* xx. 9.	LXV. xx. 9.	LXV. xx. 9.
	† xx. 13.		
LXVI.		LXVI. xx. 20.	LXVI. xx. 20.
LXVII.	* xx. 27.	LXVII. xx. 27.	LXVII. xx. 27.
LXVIII.	* xx. 46.	LXVIII. xx. 45 ( <i>ms.</i> ).	LXVIII. xx. 45.
		LXVIII. xxi. 5.	LXVIII. xxi. 5.
LXVIII.			
	xxi. 7.	LXX. xxi. 20.	LXX. xxi. 20.
LXX.			
	xxi. 23.		
	xxi. 34.		
LXXI.	* xxi. 37.		LXXI. xxi. 37.
LXXII.	* xxii. 7.	LXXII. xxii. 7.	LXXII. xxii. 7.
	* xxii. 24.	LXXIII. xxii. 24.	LXXIII. xxii. 24.
LXXIII.	* xxii. 31.	LXXIII. xxii. 31.	LXXIII. xxii. 31.
[LXXIII.]	* xxii. 39.	LXXV. xxii. 39.	LXXIV. xxii. 39.
[LXXV.]	* xxii. 47.	LXXVI. xxii. 47.	LXXVII. xxii. 66.
LXXVI.		LXXVII. xxii. 66.	
	xxiii. 17.		
LXXVII.	* xxiii. 26.	LXXVIII. xxiii. 26.	LXXVIII. xxiii. 26.
	xxiii. 34.		
	xxiii. 38.		
	xxiii. 44.		
	xxiii. 47.		
LXXVIII. ( <i>sic</i> ).	* xxiv. 1.		xxiv. 1 (?).
	xxiv. 10.		
	xxiv. 12.		
	xxiv. 13.		
	xxiv. 36.		
	xxiv. 50.		

In the above table an obelus (†) indicates that though the place thus signalled has indications which generally betoken the beginning of a section (*i.e.* in most cases a large letter, sometimes set out in the margin, and preceded by a mark of punctuation), it is yet not so to be regarded. The large letters, etc., in such places are obviously due to the fancy of our scribe, or of the writer of a manuscript from which his is derived. He shows, for example, his fondness for symmetrical

<sup>1</sup> Either this verse, or verse 34, seems to be the first of a fresh capitulum in the Book of Armagh and the Codex Epternacensis.

writing at vi. 20-22, he exhibits elsewhere a propensity to write such words as "dixit," "dicebat," etc., in the margin without any apparent purpose (xix. 26, etc.), and he is prone to give similar prominence to "Et ecce" (v. 18. xiii. 7). With more reason he detaches a remarkable saying (i. 68. iii. 16, etc.) or even a portion of a saying to which he wishes to give emphasis (xii. 56, etc.) from the context by writing the first letter in the margin. Omitting all such cases we have not more than 142 sections in St Luke's Gospel. Of these, 65 begin at the same places (or within a verse thereof) as sections of *durm* or  $r_1$ , or are distinctly supported in opposition to these manuscripts by the summary. These are marked with asterisks (\*). In 6 other places *mull*, differing from *durm* and  $r_1$ , is consistent with the summary (vi. 39, ix. 12, xi. 11, 35, xii. 15, xxi. 7).<sup>1</sup> These 71 sections are all satisfactorily explained on the supposition that *mull* was copied from an exemplar having divisions similar to  $r_1$  and *durm*. We come now to consider some cases which might be held to point in another direction.

There are in the first place divisions omitted in *mull* (vi. 12, vii. 11, ix. 51, x. 1, xiii. 22, xx. 20<sup>2</sup>). These omissions, numerous though they be, need not surprise us, for similar omissions are frequent in *durm*, and occur also in  $r_1$ , as is proved by the numbers<sup>3</sup> or by comparison with the other authorities (iii. 1, v. 12, vi. 6, ix. 18, xviii. 35), and perhaps also in the summary (ix. 37, xviii. 31, xxii. 24). In other cases we cannot be sure whether a division has been omitted, or wrongly placed (ii. 38, vii. 31, ix. 6): but if we may trust the summary, misplacements are met with also in  $r_1$  (ix. 28, xii. 32). On the whole we may say that the sectional divisions of *durm* and  $r_1$ , reappear in *mull* as accurately as could be expected on the supposition that the latter is copied, or descended from an exemplar in which these sections were preserved. There remain, however, about 50 or 60 divisions to which nothing corresponds in the other manuscripts. What is to be said of these? They will be found in almost all cases to be perfectly natural divisions of the text, a good many of them being in fact marked as paragraphs in printed editions. Some may correspond to sections the indication of which has been omitted in the other authorities, for all alike have been shown to be guilty of omissions.<sup>4</sup> Some again may be accounted for by the ambiguity of the summary, which now and then leaves it uncertain at which of two or more places a section is intended to begin. Our scribe in such cases may combine the testimony of

<sup>1</sup> A vinculum connecting two or more references indicates that the summary leaves it uncertain at which of these places the section was intended to begin.

<sup>2</sup> The capitulum (66) which begins at this verse is, however, part of the preeding in the summary in the Book of Armagh and the Codex Epternacensis, as in our manuscript.

<sup>3</sup> See above p. 30 note 3.

<sup>4</sup> Such may be the paragraphs beginning at ix. 21, xii. 8, 40, xiii. 18, xiv. 12, xvii. 28. See above.

several witnesses. See for example ii. 21, 25 ; xi. 11, 14 ; xii. 13, 15, 16 ; xix. 11, 12 ; xxi. 34, 37 ; xxiii. 17, 26, 34. But probably the majority are to be regarded as sub-divisions of the sections,<sup>1</sup> due either to our scribe or to the scribe of his archetype. It will be observed, as might be expected, that these extra divisions are most numerous where the older sections are longest, that is, at the beginning and end of the Gospel. At these places also, the indications in the summary are unusually ambiguous and inadequate.

A good illustration of the way in which extra sections would have appeared and some divisions been omitted in a manuscript written as we suppose the Book of Mulling to have been, is found in the case of the Codex Sangermanensis ( $g_1$ ). The Gospel according to St Matthew in this manuscript is divided into 74 numbered sections,<sup>2</sup> which are further sub-divided. The first words of each section are written in uncial rubric, and in the case of all but two (60, 61) the beginnings of the sections are the beginnings of paragraphs. There are in all about 163 paragraphs. Now if a transcript were made from this manuscript, preserving with absolute fidelity its divisions, but with the numbers omitted and the uncial writing copied in the ordinary hand of the scribe, two of the sectional division marks would be omitted, and there would be left no less than 91 indications of division not corresponding to recognised capitula—quite as large a proportion as we actually find in Mulling's St Luke. If the fancy or the stupidity of the copyist were exercised, the proportion would of course be still further increased. The Gospel of St Luke, in fact, in our book would appear to have been copied by a careful scribe from an archetype in which the sections were given less accurately than in  $g_1$ , while the sub-divisions were less numerous.

The evidence in the case of St Matthew's Gospel for the connection of the sections of the Book of Mulling with the ancient divisions is exactly parallel to that just given for St Luke.

In the following table will be found marked the beginning of each section of the first Gospel in our book. *Durm* and  $r_1$  being almost useless here for our purpose, I have had recourse to the Codex Sangermanensis ( $g_1$ ). This manuscript contains a "capitulatio" and the corresponding sections are indicated in the text of the Gospels. The numbers to the left are those found in the text and capitulatio of the St Germain manuscript. In some cases our book agrees with the text of this codex against the capitulatio: this is indicated by the letters *mag.*, enclosed in brackets after the numeral. At other times a section in the Book of Mulling is consistent with the summary, but at variance with the marginal number in  $g_1$ . When this happens the letters (*cap.*) are added. In some instances of this kind the summary and the text of  $g_1$  contradict one another. Finally it

<sup>1</sup> Many of them are mentioned as separate headings in the *Capitula*. *E.g.*, ii. 36, v. 36, xi. 5, 9, xii. 27, xiv. 12, 34, xviii. 15, xxiii. 34, xxiv. 13, 50.

<sup>2</sup> The numeral has in one case (§ 60) been accidentally omitted.

happens pretty frequently that our manuscript has two marks of division either of which would accord with the commencement of the section as described in the summary. This is marked by the use of a vineulum. Thus, for example, a division is marked in our book at vii. 7, and again at vii. 13. Either of these may be the beginning of § 16 according to the capitulatio, though in the text of  $g_1$  the corresponding numeral is found at the latter place.

CODEx SANGER-MANENSIS.	BOOK OF MULLING.	CODEx SANGER-MANENSIS.	BOOK OF MULLING.
I. ( <i>marg.</i> ).	i. 1.	XXXVIII.	xi. 25.
I. ( <i>cap.</i> ).	i. 18.	XXXV.	xii. 1.
II.	ii. 1.	XXXVI.	xii. 9.
III. ( <i>cap.</i> ).	ii. 17.	XXXVII.	xii. 38.
III.	iii. 1.	XXXVIII.	xii. 46.
	iii. 5.	XXXVIII.	xiii. 1.
	iii. 10 "Om- nis."	XL.	xiii. 24.
V.	iv. 1.		xiii. 31.
	iv. 5 (?).		xiii. 33 (?).
VII.	iv. 17.	XLII.	xiii. 36.
	iv. 21.		xiii. 53.
	iv. 23.	XLIII.	xiv. 1.
VIII.	v. 1. }		xiv. 23 "Ues- pere."
	† v. 3-10.1		
	v. 13.	XLVI.	xv. 15.
	v. 14.		xv. 21 (?).
	v. 21. }	XLVII.	xv. 28.
X.	v. 26 (?).	XLVIII.	xv. 32.
XI.	v. 44.		xvi. 13.
XII.	vi. 2.	LI.	xvii. 22 (?).
	† vi. 9 "Pater."	LII.	xvii. 24. }
	† vi. 14.		xviii. 1.
XIII.	vi. 16.	LIII.	xviii. 8.
	vi. 23.		xviii. 15.
XIII.	vi. 24.	LIII.	xviii. 19.
XV.	vii. 3.	LV.	xviii. 23.
	vii. 7. }	LVI.	xix. 1.
XVI.	vii. 13.		xix. 13.
XVII.	vii. 21.		xix. 16.3
XVIII.	vii. 28.		xix. 22.
	vii. 29 (?).	LVII.	xix. 27.
	vii. 29 "Nou- enim" (?).	LVII. ( <i>marg.</i> ).	xx. 1.
	viii. 1 (?).	LVIII.	xx. 17.
XVIII.	viii. 5.	LVIII.	xx. 29.
	† viii. 11 (?).	LX.4	xxi. 1 "Tunc."
XX.	viii. 14.	LXI.	xxi. 17.
XXI.	viii. 18.	LXII.	xxi. 23 (?).
	viii. 23.2		xxi. 33.
XXII.	viii. 28 (?).	LXIII.	xxii. 11.
XXIII.	ix. 2 "Et uidens."	LXIII.	xxii. 15.
		LXV.	xxii. 23.
XXIII.	ix. 10.	LXVI.	xxiii. 1.
XXV.	ix. 14.	LXVIII.	xxiii. 13.
XXVII.	ix. 27.		xxiv. 1.
XXVIII.	ix. 35.	LXVIII.	xxiv. 14 (?).
	x. 5.		xxv. 1.
	x. 16. }	LXX.	xxv. 30 (?).
	x. 23. }	LXXI.	xxv. 31. }
XXX.	x. 25 "Et si patrem" (?).	LXXII.	xxvi. 1.
	x. 34.	LXXII.	xxvi. 17.
XXXI. ( <i>cap.</i> ).	xi. 1.	LXXIII.5	xxvi. 31.
XXXII.	† xi. 10 "Eccc."		xxvii. 11.
XXXIII.	xi. 16. }	LXXIII.	xxvii. 45.
	xi. 20. }		xxviii. 62. }
			xxviii. 1.
			xxviii. 16.

<sup>1</sup> First letter of "beatus" always written as if beginning a section.

<sup>2</sup> A capitulum begins here in the Codex Epternacensis.

<sup>3</sup> This, rather than xix. 13, is probably the true beginning of the section. See the authorities in Wordsworth's *Vulgate*, i. 33.

<sup>4</sup> The numeral is omitted in margin.

<sup>5</sup> Numbered lxxii. in margin by an error.



This table seems to need little comment. It does not appear to leave room for doubting that the divisions of our manuscript were ultimately founded on those represented in the summary and text of  $\gamma_1$ . A good many of the ancient divisions are indeed omitted or misplaced (6, 9, 26, 29, 41, 44, 45, 49, 50, 67), but the coincidence of those which remain with the sections of  $\gamma_1$  is most marked.

It is worth while to remark that, whether the arguments just used are sound or not, it is quite certain that the divisions of St Matthew and St Luke in our manuscript have nothing to do with the Eusebian sections. These number 324 in St Luke, Mulling's paragraphs are about 160, and only about 100 of them begin at the same point as a Eusebian section. In St Matthew the number of paragraphs is less than 110, the Eusebian sections 355. The beginning of paragraph and section coincide in about 60 places.

When we turn to St Mark we discover that all is changed. This Gospel was most undoubtedly derived from an exemplar in which the principle of division was that of Eusebius. The proof is easy. The Eusebian sections marked in the first ten chapters of St Mark in Tischendorf's edition of the Codex Amiatinus are 116 in number. Of these at least 97 (more probably 102), coincide with Mulling's paragraphs, not more than 11 (probably 6) are omitted, and 6 are differently placed, while no sub-divisions are discernible. It is difficult to fix the numbers exactly, owing to the worn state of the manuscript, but those which I have given may be regarded as very nearly exact, and they tell their own tale.

It seems almost impossible to find order or system in the numerous divisions of St John. But punctuation marks (usually one or two points, . or . . ) which elsewhere are used sparingly, are here so frequent, and capitals are used in such arbitrary fashion, that one is led to surmise that the text of this Gospel had as a not very remote ancestor a copy written *per cola et commata*. We may take as an example chap. xxi. vv. 19-23, which appear thus (the vertical lines indicating the ends of the lines of writing):—

Hoc hautem dixit significans qua morte clari | ficaturus esset deum.  
et hoc cum dixis | set. dicit ei. sequere mé conuersus | petrus uidit.<sup>1</sup>  
illum discipulum quem dilegebat. ih̄s | sequentem qui recubuit in  
coena | supra pectus eius. et dicit quis domine | qui tradit té . . Hunc  
ergo cum | uidisset petrus dicit ih̄u Domine | quid hic Dicit ei ih̄s Sic  
eum uolo | manere donec ueniam quid ad té | tú mé sequeris exiuit  
ergo sermo iste | inter fratres quia discipulus ille | non moriretur Sed  
sic uolo ma | nere donec ueniam. quid ad té | Hic etc.

Better passages than this might have been chosen for exhibiting the punctuation of the manuscript. One reason for preferring this one will appear presently. We see at once that the scribe copied the marks mechanically from his exemplar, omitting some—and these not the least important from the point of view of the reader. Assuming

<sup>1</sup> The point here is doubtful.

that each of those which he preserves represents the close, and each capital letter the beginning, of a line, and guessing where such guidance is not forthcoming, we may write the passage "stichometrically" as follows:—

Hoc hautem dixit  
 significans qua morte clarificaturus esset deum  
 et hoc cum dixisset  
 dicit ei  
 sequere me  
 conuersus petrus uidit illum discipulum  
 quem dilegebat ih̄s  
 sequentem  
 qui recubuit in coena supra pectus eius  
 et dicit  
 quis domine qui tradit te  
 Hunc ergo cum uidisset petrus  
 dicit ih̄u  
 Domine quid hic  
 Dicit ei ih̄s  
 Sic eum uole manere donec ueniam  
 quid ad te  
 tu me sequeris  
 exiuit ergo sermo iste inter fratres  
 quia discipulus ille non moriretur  
 Sed sic uolo manere donec veniam  
 quid ad te  
 Hic, etc.

We perceive that the marks have guided us correctly (except in one case) in the few places where they occur. We may now point out another fact. The scribe has omitted a few words before "sed sic uolo." We may suppose them to have run

et non dixit illud ih̄s quia non moriretur,

and to have been passed over through homœoteleuton. They would naturally form a single line (or perhaps two complete lines) of the exemplar, if it was written as I have supposed; and so the error would be completely explained.

This is indeed only one of a number of similar cases. The fourth Gospel is written carelessly, and the scribe has been guilty of many omissions. The most notable are the following: iv. 23, 24 (qui adoret...deus et); v. 37 (et qui me misit); vi. 54 (amen amen dico uobis); vii. 8 (hunc...festum); 28 (docens...ih̄s et); 42 (de bethleem...dauid); viii. 13 (testimonium perhibes); 39 (dixit eis ih̄s); 46; ix. 20 (et quia...est); 21 (nos nescimus); 23 (ætatem habet); xi. 3; 25, 26 (etiamsi...credit in me); xii. 16 (tunc recordati...de eo); 34 (quis...hominis); xv. 16 (fructum afferatis et);

22-24 (nunc autem...haberent); xvi. 17, 18 (et non...modicum, apparently); xx. 6; xxi. 23 (see above).

Many, but not all, of the omissions are due to homœoteleuton. It is natural to suppose that the majority of them consist of one or more complete lines of the archetype. But if so it is quite certain that the lines must have varied very much in length. All, except perhaps those at vii. 28, viii. 13, would have formed lines or groups of lines in a manuscript correctly written *per cola et commata*. In one of them (viii. 46) our manuscript is in company with Codex Bezae, where the omission is doubtless due to the cause which has been suggested.

One other reading may be mentioned in confirmation of our hypothesis. At v. 44 two clauses are inverted, namely "quomodo potestis uos credere qui gloriam ab inuicem accipitis," and "et gloriam quæ a solo est [deo] non queritis." One or other had probably been omitted in the text of archetype, and had been restored in the margin. Does then either clause make a complete line or set of lines? The reading is at once explained if they do. Evidence is hardly needed, but the witness of *d* is here no doubt true, and it is on our side—

quomodo potestis uos credere  
gloriam abinuicem accipientes  
et gloriam ab unico deo  
non queritis. nolite arbitrari

The point in the last line probably marks (see Harris, *Codex Bezae*, p. 241 *sq.*) a division of lines in the archetype.

We pause now to consider somewhat more carefully the sections into which the Book of Mulling is divided in St Matthew and St Luke, and to ascertain, if we may, what conclusion may be drawn from the presence of these sections as to the history of the manuscript.

First let us remark that in many copies we have not merely the sections, but also a summary or *capitulatio* at the beginning of the Gospels, indicating their contents. Now summaries of the type found in the Book of Durrow are almost confined to old Latin manuscripts of the European family, and Vulgate texts which have a considerable Old Latin mixture.<sup>1</sup> Their antiquity is thus assured. We are in fact warranted in the inference that in any manuscript in which the summary occurs it has been ultimately derived from an old Latin exemplar. The text, on the other hand, may bear unmistakable signs of derivation from a Vulgate archetype. But this does not make our conclusion as to the summary less certain. It only shows that at some step of the process by which the copy under consideration came into being, a scribe had two exemplars

<sup>1</sup> Berger, *op. cit.*, pp. 311, 353 *sqq.*

before him, from one of which he took his text, and from the other his *capitulatio*.

In some cases we may feel fairly confident that we have before us a manuscript, not merely ultimately derived, but actually copied in this fashion from two exemplars. Take for example the Book of Durrow. In this manuscript we have a summary. The text on the other hand is so slightly mixed that we may feel sure that it was transcribed or derived from a Vulgate. To increase our assurance we note the fact that in the body of the text the division into paragraphs does not agree with the *capitula*. But there is something more. The *numbers* of the *capitula* are in many cases entered in the margin, and copied in such a way that it is frequently difficult to discover the exact point at which the section indicated by a number was supposed to begin.<sup>1</sup> We may conclude that these numbers were taken, not from the copy which furnished the text, but from that which supplied the summary: and we are thus brought by another route to the opinion to which the consideration of the evangelical symbols has already led us, that the scribe of the Book of Durrow had before him two manuscripts, a Vulgate, from which he transcribed his text, and an Old Latin copy, from which he took the summary, the numbers just mentioned, and his conception of the symbols of the Evangelists.

This supposition is confirmed by another consideration. The summaries of St Matthew and St Mark in this codex precede the Gospels. Those of St Luke and St John are written (apparently in a different hand) after St John.<sup>2</sup> How did this come about? We can only guess, but our guess seems to have some likelihood of being correct. It is this. The summaries preceded the Gospels in the Old Latin exemplar from which they were copied, and came in the order: St Matthew, St John, St Luke, St Mark. The Durrow scribe wished to bring the order into conformity with that of his Vulgate "arguments" and Gospels. After transcribing the summary of St Matthew he therefore turned over to St Mark. This finished he had come to the end of the preliminary matter in his pre-hieronymian exemplar, and so, forgetting that he had omitted two of the summaries, he laid it aside and went on with his Vulgate copy. It may be said that this indicated great stupidity on his part, but we have many proofs that the scribe of the Book of Durrow was singularly wanting in intelligence.<sup>3</sup> His error was subsequently observed by another, who repaired it as best he could by writing the *capitulatio* of St Luke and St John at the end of the Gospels.

Turning now from the summary to the sections themselves we come to something which is of even more venerable antiquity. The sections are not only found in Old Latin texts: their origin can be traced to a Greek source. They are nearly identical with those of

<sup>1</sup> Abbott, *Evang. Vers.*, p. v.

<sup>2</sup> Abbott, *op. cit.*, p. xxvi.

<sup>3</sup> Abbott in *Hermathena*, viii. 200; *Evang. Vers. Antch.*, p. xx, sq.

the Codex Vaticanus (B), the oldest copy of the original text of the Gospels in existence. Wherever then we find these divisions not merely marked in the margin of a Latin Gospel, but actually imbedded in its text, we may be assured that it is ultimately descended from a copy of an Old Latin version, however far removed its present text may be from the Old Latin type.

To apply all this to our book. The Gospels of St Matthew and St Luke are divided into the ancient sections, the marginal numbers having disappeared. These Gospels therefore have been derived from a manuscript of the Old Latin. The present text, indeed, as we shall see hereafter, is not for the most part pre-hieronymian. It must, therefore, in the course of time, have taken into itself many Vulgate readings. St Mark, on the other hand, is divided into Eusebian sections; and the preliminary matter is, so far as it remains, such as properly belongs to Jerome's Version. The text therefore of the second Gospel and of the first volumen is derived in the long run from one or more<sup>1</sup> Vulgate manuscripts. While finally St John, with neither system of division, gives no indication of the ultimate source from which it was taken. But as one of its ancestors was written *per cola et commata*, and as the other Gospels bear no trace of this arrangement, it was probably ultimately derived from an exemplar different from that of the other parts of the book. Our conclusion is that the Book of Mulling, or one of its immediate ancestors, was compiled from at least two, probably from a greater number of separate exemplars.

<sup>1</sup> It appears more likely that St Mark and the preliminary matter were derived from different archetypes. For it will be argued hereafter (p. 71 *sqq.*) that the marginal numbers which appear in the former were copied from the same manuscript as the Eusebian Canons. But the divisions indicated by the numerals not seldom differ from those implied by the paragraphs of the text itself. Sections, for example, indicated by marginal signatures, begin without capitals at Mar. ii. 23, vi. 46, viii. 32 (*Et adpræhendens*), ix. 43, xiv. 36. At iii. 7 the number is placed opposite the beginning of the verse, while the second "*Et*" is written in the margin; numbers are assigned to viii. 30, x. 28, xii. 28, xiv. 33, xiv. 64 (*quid*), while the corresponding capitals are found at viii. 29 (*Respondens*), x. 29, xii. 22, xiv. 37, xiv. 63 (*Quid*) respectively. Other instances might be added, but these may suffice.

## CHAPTER IV.

## THE BIBLICAL TEXT.

THE purpose of this chapter is to direct attention to two portions of the text of the Synoptic Gospels preserved in the Book of Mulling, which appear to be in themselves of considerable interest, and to have some bearing on the history of the manuscript, and on that of the Irish recension of the Latin Bible.

§ 1. *Corrections.*

It is necessary, however, by way of preface, to notice one of the palæographical features of the manuscript. It will be at once perceived by any one who inspects it, that the hand of a corrector has been busy on its pages. Corrections, it is true, are in some places much more frequent than in others; but there is scarcely a page in the entire book which is altogether free from them.

The existence of a large number of these corrections is easily explained. The manuscript, as originally written, was not supplied with the numbers in the margin referring to the so-called Ammonian Sections and Eusebian Canons. The Gospels of St Matthew and St Luke, moreover, were divided into paragraphs, which, whatever may have been their origin, certainly had no relation to these sections. When, therefore, the numbers were subsequently added, an attempt was made to indicate the exact point at which each section began. This was effected in various ways. Usually the end of a section was denoted by a punctuation mark, resembling a colon followed by a comma (:,). The following word was sometimes marked with the sign  $\diagup$ , and a similar sign was placed over the corresponding number in the margin (*e.g.* Mark viii. 30, f. 43 *v* b). More commonly, however, the first letter or two of the section were altered in such a way as to make them more prominent. Sometimes they were simply re-traced, as we may see, for example, in line 15 of the second column of f. 48 *r*.<sup>1</sup> At other times they were re-written in a larger character. Examples of this may be found in line 8, where the sign for 'et' (7) has been transformed into  $\mathcal{E}$ , and line 23 of col. a, where, in the space occupied by *e*, the letter *e* has been written, the original letter being left otherwise unaltered. Occasionally, when the first word of a section happened to be also the first word of a line, the scribe has placed one or more dots under it,

<sup>1</sup> A facsimile reproduction of this page will be found facing the title page.

re-writing the same word in the margin (f. 46 *r* *b*, ll. 3, 23). But not infrequently he has actually erased the original word and written it afresh, either in the margin (as in f. 48 *r*, col. a, l. 36), or in the space occupied by the erasure, or partly in one, partly in the other (f. 46 *r* *a*, ll. 15, 16). This is frequently done when it is desired that a section should begin with the first word of a line, where the original writing does not admit of its doing so. In this case the last word or two of the previous section are also erased, and transferred to the right margin opposite the preceding line. In such cases as those last mentioned, we can, of course, usually have no absolute certainty as to the original reading of the manuscript; but obviously we have no right to assume, in the absence of indications pointing in that direction, that it differed from that which the corrector has put in its room.

But besides the corrections made with the object of adapting the manuscript to the division into sections, there are very many others the purpose of which is undoubtedly to change the reading. Much the same methods are used in this as in the former case. A word has a dot placed under each of its letters, and that which is to be substituted for it is written above it (f. 48 *r* *a*, l. 20) or in the margin; a word to be omitted is marked with a group of three dots above it, or with single dots above or below, or in both positions (f. 48 *r* *a*, ll. 25, 36); and in the case of a whole sentence so dealt with, a punctuation mark precedes and follows the omitted portion, and a wave line is drawn down the margin (f. 46 *r* *a*, ll. 29–31); a word to be supplied is written above the line or in the margin, with a mark indicating its place in the text (f. 46 *r* *b*, ll. 20, 35; f. 48 *r* *b*, l. 23); or, finally, a word is erased, and the resulting space is either left blank, or something else written in it (*e.g.* f. 48 *r* *a*, l. 30, where  $\bar{u}$  = uero is written over a partially erased  $\bar{h}$  = haitem, f. 48 *r* *b*, l. 20). Where we find a word written over an erasure not at the beginning or end of a section we are plainly warranted in the inference that the displaced word of the original text was different, and we can often conjecture with high probability what the original word actually was.

## § 2. *General Character of the Text.*

It is now our task to make an attempt to ascertain the general character of the text of the Gospels in the Book of Mulling as *originally written* (which we shall henceforth designate by the letter  $\mu$ ). This we shall most easily do by collating a few passages with the Codex Amiatinus (A). In parallel columns with the collation of these selected portions of  $\mu$ , we shall place, for comparison, collations of the same passages as they are found in three other Irish manuscripts. We take first the Book of Durrow (*Dur-mach*), which may be regarded as the ancient Celtic manuscript of

the Gospels which approaches most nearly to the ordinary Vulgate text. The Book of Kells (Q) is a good example of the usual type of Irish text,—having a Vulgate base, but with a large contingent of old Latin readings. While, as an example of pre-hieronymian Irish texts, we give in the fourth column the readings of Codex Usserianus ( $r_1$ ). This manuscript is in a fragmentary state, and by this circumstance I have been mainly guided in selecting the passages to be collated. It is essential that all four texts should be approximately complete in the passages presented, and I have therefore chosen those places in which the Codex Usserianus is practically intact for at least two or three consecutive verses.

No complete collation or edition of the Book of Mulling has been published. The text of the Codex Usserianus has been printed by Professor Abbott, with collations of the Books of Kells and Durrow and another manuscript ( $r_2$ ), which will be referred to lower down. I have re-collated all these texts, so far as it appeared necessary for my purpose, and where the reading of any of the manuscripts differs, in my judgment, from that given by Dr Abbott, I have indicated this fact by inserting the letters '*ms.*' in brackets after the reading in question. Mere differences of spelling I have neglected, but a few readings which might perhaps have been included under this description I have retained, marking them, however, with an obelus (†), and building no argument upon them. Readings in which  $\mu$  and  $r_1$  agree are indicated by asterisks (\*).



## A 1.

LIBER MULLING.	CODEx DURMACHENSIS.	CODEx KENANENSIS.	CODEx USSERIANUS (r <sub>1</sub> ).
<b>Matt. xxi.</b>			
22. 23.			<i>om. docentem.</i>
24. * dicite' mihi quem si dixeritis mihi <i>pro</i> quem si dix- eritis mihi.	<i>aut pro et tert.</i> ( <i>ms.</i> ).	<i>eis pro illis.</i>	<i>uerbum pro sermonem.</i> * q(uem dicit)e mihi <i>pro</i> quem si d. m.
25. † intra <i>pro</i> inter.		† intra <i>pro</i> inter.	[fui]t <i>pro</i> erat. de caelo <i>pro</i> e caelo. illi autem <i>pro</i> at illi.

## A 2.

<b>Marc. vii.</b>			
29.		<i>illi + iesus.</i>	<i>dix[it] pro ait.</i> <i>iesus pro illi (vel illi</i> <i>+ iesus).</i>
		<i>sermonem hunc</i> <i>pro hunc ser.</i>	<i>uade propter hunc ser-</i> <i>monem pro p. h.</i> <i>s. uade.</i>
30. abisset + ad.	abisset + ad.	abisset + ad.	<i>a pro de.</i> <i>uen[is]set pro abisset.</i> <i>om. suam.</i>
† super <i>pro</i> supra.			
31.		<i>Tyri + et.</i> † <i>medicos pro me-</i> <i>dios (ms.).</i>	
32 deprecabantur <i>pro</i> deprecantur.		<i>inponant pro in-</i> <i>ponat.</i>	<i>adferunt pro adducunt.</i> <i>depræcantes pro et</i> <i>deprecantur.</i> <i>inponeret pro inponat.</i>
33.		<i>deorsum pro seor-</i> <i>sum.</i>	<i>ei pro illi.</i> <i>suscipie[ns] pro adpre-</i> <i>hensens.</i>
		<i>auriculas + eius.</i>	<i>conspuens [mi]sit digi-</i> <i>tos suos in auriculas</i> <i>eius et pro misit d. s.</i> <i>in a. et expuens.</i>
<b>Marc. viii.</b>			
2. hanc turbam <i>pro</i> turba.	† turbam <i>pro</i> turba.	<i>turbam istam pro</i> <i>turba.</i>	<i>istam turbam pro</i> <i>turba.</i> <i>quoniam pro quia.</i> <i>om. ecce.</i> <i>triduum iam pro iam</i> <i>triduo.</i> <i>est ex quo hic sunt pro</i> <i>sustinent me.</i>
	† <i>traditio pro tri-</i> <i>duo.</i>		

A 2—*continued.*

LIBER MULLING.	CODEx DURMACHENSIS.	CODEx KENANENSIS.	CODEx USSERIANUS (v <sub>1</sub> ).
3. Marc. viii.			dimittere <i>pro</i> si dimi- sero. <i>om.</i> suam.
		domus suas <i>pro</i> domum suam.	nollo ne fatigentur <i>pro</i> deficient.
4. respondentes <i>pro</i> responderunt.		quia quidam <i>pro</i> quidam enim.	quo[n]iam quidem et aliqui <i>pro</i> quidam enim.
			his <i>pro</i> eis.
5. † interrogabit <i>pro</i> interrogavit.			sui+dicentes. quis p[ro]s[er]sit <i>pro</i> po- terit quis. <i>om.</i> hic.
	† quod ( <i>ms.</i> ) <i>pro</i> quot.	dixerunt+ei ( <i>ms.</i> ).	† quod <i>pro</i> quot.

## A 3.

19. Luc. iii.			faciebat <i>pro</i> fecit. et adiecit <i>pro</i> adiecit et.
20. *† super <i>pro</i> supra. <i>om.</i> et <i>sec.</i>	<i>om.</i> et <i>sec.</i>	<i>om.</i> et <i>sec.</i>	*† super <i>pro</i> supra.
† carcerem <i>pro</i> car- cere.	† carcerem <i>pro</i> car- cere ( <i>ms.</i> ).	† carcerem <i>pro</i> car- cere.	
21.			baptizatus esset <i>pro</i> baptizaretur. populus+ab iohanne. cumque et iesus bap- tizatus esset <i>pro</i> et iesu baptizato. +ab eo <i>ante</i> et <i>sec.</i> orante+ipso. aperti sunt caeli <i>pro</i> apertum est caelum. quasi <i>pro</i> sicut.
22.		† columbam <i>pro</i> co- lumba.	
te+bene.	te+bene.	te+bene ( <i>ms.</i> ).	eum <i>pro</i> ipsum. filius meus es tu <i>pro</i> tu es f. m. <i>om.</i> dilectus. ego hodie genui te <i>pro</i> in te complacuit mihi.
23. * putabatur <i>pro</i> pu- taretur.	putabatur <i>pro</i> pu- taretur.	putabatur <i>pro</i> pu- taretur.	qui* putabatur <i>pro</i> ut putaretur.

## A 3—continued.

LIBER MULLING.	CODEx DURMACHENSIS.	CODEx KENANENSIS.	CODEx USSERIANUS (c <sub>1</sub> ).
<b>Luc. xv.</b>			
5. * eam <i>pro</i> illam. *† imponet <i>pro</i> im- ponit.			* eam <i>pro</i> illam. *† imponet <i>pro</i> imponit.
* super <i>pro</i> in. cum gaudio <i>pro</i> gaudens.			inp. + eam. * super <i>pro</i> in.
6. om. et. domui <i>pro</i> domum.	gratulamini <i>pro</i> congrat.	uicinos + suos.	amicos + suos.
7. dico + autem.	unum peccatorem <i>pro</i> uno pecca- tore.	dico + autem. unum peccatorem <i>pro</i> uno pecca- tore.	quod <i>pro</i> quia. inuenerim <i>pro</i> inueni. in <i>pro</i> super.
(hiat μ.)	† habentem <i>pro</i> ha- bente.	† habentem <i>pro</i> ha- bente.	agente <i>pro</i> habente.
(hiat μ.)	istos <i>pro</i> iustis.	iustos <i>pro</i> iustis.	iustos <i>pro</i> iustis. egent <i>pro</i> indigent.
(hiat μ.)	† paenitentiam <i>pro</i> paenitentia.	† penitentiam <i>pro</i> paenitentia.	
8. (hiat μ.)	uertit <i>pro</i> euertit.	uertit <i>pro</i> euertit.	quae + est. decem + et. om. dragmam. scopis inuadat <i>pro</i> euertit.
domum + suam.		domum + suam.	inuenuat + eam.
9.		amicos et uicinos (ms.) <i>pro</i> amicas et uicinas.	quod <i>pro</i> quia. inuenerim <i>pro</i> inueni.

## A 4.

<b>Joh. i.</b>			
16. † accipimus.		† accipimus (ms.). acc. + et (ms.).	quoniam <i>pro</i> et.
17. (hiat μ.)	acc. + et (ms.).		quoniam <i>pro</i> quia.
* gratia + autem.			* gratia + autem.
18. * unquam + nisi.		unquam + nisi (ms.).	* unquam + nisi.
19. * hoc + est.	hoc + est.	hoc + est.	* hoc + [es]t. cum misissent <i>pro</i> quando miserunt.
miserunt + ei. om. ad eum.		qui <i>pro</i> quis (ms.).	illum <i>pro</i> eum pri. eum sec. + dicentes.

## A 4—continued.

LIBER MULLING.	CODEx DURMACHENSIS.	CODEx KENANENSIS.	CODEx USSERIANUS (r <sub>1</sub> ).
<b>Joh. i.</b>			
20. <i>om.</i> et confessus est <i>sec.</i>			<i>om.</i> et <i>tert.</i>
21. eum + * iterum' tu.			[eg]o non sum <i>pro</i> non sum ego.
dixit <i>pro</i> dicit.			* eum + it[erum]. dicentes <i>pro</i> quid ergo.
22.			<i>om.</i> et <i>sec.</i> ait <i>pro</i> dicit. sum + numquid. <i>om.</i> et <i>tert.</i> + et <i>ad</i> <i>init.</i> (dixerunt [ms.] = <i>Am.</i> ) <i>om.</i> ei. es + tu. nos miserunt <i>pro</i> mi- serunt nos. + qu[i] eijs <i>ad</i> <i>init.</i>
es + dic nobis.			
23. <i>om.</i> ego.	essaia <sup>s</sup> profeta dixit (ms.) <i>pro</i> dixit e. p.	ergo <i>pro</i> ego.	
24. añ <i>pro</i> erant.	<i>om.</i> erant.	<i>om.</i> erant.	<i>om.</i> erant. a <i>pro</i> ex. iudaeis <i>pro</i> phariseis. ut interrogarent <i>pro</i> et interrogauerunt. ( <i>hiat</i> r <sub>1</sub> .)
25. <i>om.</i> et ( <i>sed spat.</i> <i>relict.</i> ), illum <i>pro</i> eum. * + ei ante quid.	+ ei (ms.) ante quid.	+ ei ante quid.	* + ei ante quid.
<b>Joh. xi.</b>			
30. * hautem <i>pro</i> enim.	autem (ms.) <i>pro</i> enim.		* an[tem] <i>pro</i> enim. monumentum <i>pro</i> cas- tellum.
hic <i>pro</i> erat adhuc.			eo <i>pro</i> illo. quo <i>pro</i> ubi. obitauerat (ms.) <i>pro</i> occurrerat. [a]utem <i>pro</i> igitur.
31. * ea <i>pro</i> illa. ut consulentur <i>pro</i> et consolabantur.	ea (ms.) <i>pro</i> illa.	ea <i>pro</i> illa.	* ea <i>pro</i> illa.
† exit <i>pro</i> exiit.			ut niderunt <i>pro</i> cum uidissent. quod <i>pro</i> quia <i>pri.</i> festina[nt] <i>pro</i> cito. surrexisset <i>pro</i> sur- rexit. <i>om.</i> et exiit. subsecuti <i>pro</i> secuti. quoniam <i>pro</i> quia. * autem <i>pro</i> ergo. et uidisset <i>pro</i> uidens. precidit <i>pro</i> cecidit. dicens <i>pro</i> et dixit. <i>om.</i> ei. * fuisset <i>pro</i> esset.
32. * hautem <i>pro</i> ergo. uidisset <i>pro</i> uenis- set. dicit <i>pro</i> et dixit. * fuisset' frater meus mortuus <i>pro</i> es- set m. f. meus.	uero <i>pro</i> ergo.	uero <i>pro</i> ergo.	

## A 4—continued.

LIBER MULLING.	CODEx DURMACHENSIS.	CODEx KENANENSIS.	CODEx USSERIANUS (r <sub>1</sub> ).
<b>Joh. xi.</b>			
33. <i>om. ergo.</i> <i>uidisset pro nudit.</i>		<i>nero pro ergo.</i>	<i>autem pro ergo.</i>
<i>fremit pro fremuit.</i>		<i>infremuit pro fre-</i> <i>muit.</i>	<i>flentem pro plorantem.</i> <i>flentes qui uenerant</i> <i>cum ea pro qui u.</i> <i>cum e. plorantes.</i> <i>infremuit pro fremuit.</i>
	† <i>turbabit (ms.) pro</i> <i>turbauit.</i>	<i>semet (ms.) pro se.</i>	† <i>in ante spiritu.</i>
34.			
35.			
36. † <i>et ad init. :</i> <i>dixerunt + ergo.</i>	<i>dixerunt + ergo.</i>	<i>dixerunt + ergo.</i>	<i>dixerunt + autem.</i> <i>illum pro eum.</i> <i>eis pro ipsis.</i>
37.	<i>om et.</i>	<i>eis pro ipsis.</i>	<i>ne hic pro ut et hic non.</i> <i>autem pro ergo.</i> <i>om. rursum.</i> <i>intra semet ipsum pro</i> <i>in semet ipso</i>
38. † <i>rursus pro rursum.</i>			
<i>autem + quasi.</i>	† <i>lapis pro lapis.</i>		

A mere glance over these four collations will enable us, so far as they go, to form a tolerably correct notion of the characters of the texts represented by them. *Durmach* approaches very closely to A, the best manuscript of the Vulgate: *r*<sub>1</sub> widely diverges therefrom. Midway between these two come  $\mu$  and Q. And when we actually count the variants, this general impression is confirmed. The second column gives us 18 variants of *Durmach*; the fourth, 120 of *r*<sub>1</sub>; while the first and third give respectively 43 (perhaps one or two more) of  $\mu$ , and 37 of Q. The text of  $\mu$  is therefore in these passages of the same general type as that of Q. It would, of course, be more than rash to make any inference as to the text of the entire manuscript from a few cases taken at random. But after working through a large part of the text I see no reason to alter the conclusion to which these passages appear to lead. In every chapter which I have tested—with certain exceptions to which I shall ask attention immediately—the result has been the same. The numbers of various readings in  $\mu$  and Q are almost the same; the preponderance, when it exists, being for the most part on the side of  $\mu$ . In St Mark the amount of variation from the Amiatine text in *u* is perhaps less than elsewhere, in St John greater.

§ 3. *The Old Latin Passages.*

I now come to deal with the exceptions just mentioned. They occur in the latter chapters of St Matthew and the earlier of St Luke. Following the same method as before, I append collations of a few passages.

## B 1.

LIBER MULLING.	CODEx DURMACHENSIS.	CODEx KENANENSIS.	CODEx USSERIANUS (r <sub>1</sub> ).
<b>Matt. xxiv.</b>			
16. * in <i>pro</i> ad.			[fugia]ut (ms.) in <i>pro</i> f. ad.
17. * tecto+sunt. * discendent <i>pro</i> de- scendat.			* tecto+sunt. * [descendant <i>pro</i> de- scendat.
† domu <i>pro</i> domo.		† domu <i>pro</i> domo.	
18. * agro+erit.			agro+erit.
19.*† pregnantibus <i>pro</i> praegnatis.	† praegnantibus <i>pro</i> praegnatis.	† praegnantibus <i>pro</i> praegnatis.	† praegnan[tibus] <i>pro</i> praegnatis.
20. † fiet <i>pro</i> fiat (ms.).			[u]t <i>pro</i> ut non. om. tunc.
21. * saeculi <i>pro</i> mundi.			saeculi <i>pro</i> mundi.
	(fiet = A.[ms.]).		
22. † brebiati <i>pro</i> brev. † fierit <i>pro</i> fieret. † brebiabuntur <i>pro</i> breviabuntur.			om. illi.
23.			hic+est. aut+ecce. exsurgent <i>pro</i> surgent.
21. * exurgent <i>pro</i> sur- gent.			om. magna. † errore <i>pro</i> errorem. ([fieri potest] = A[ms.].)
		om. ut.	
inducant <i>pro</i> indu- cantur. electos <i>pro</i> electi.		† induantur <i>pro</i> in- ducantur.	
26. † penetrabilibus <i>pro</i> penetralibus.	† penetrabilibus <i>pro</i> penetralibus (ms.).	† penetrabilibus <i>pro</i> penetralibus.	
credere <i>pro</i> exire.	ergo <i>pro</i> enim.	† exiit <i>pro</i> exit. apparet <i>pro</i> paret.	(hiat r <sub>1</sub> .)
* ad <i>pro</i> in. om. et sec.		om. et sec.	ad <i>pro</i> in.
23. † illic <i>pro</i> illuc. aquilae+et.		† +ali ante aquilae (ms.).	(hiat r <sub>1</sub> .)
29. +et ad init. eorum <i>pro</i> illorum.			
	obscurabuntur (ms.) <i>pro</i> ob- scurabitur.		
eorum <i>pro</i> caelo- rum.			

## B 1—continued.

LIBER MULLING.	CODEx DURMACHIENSIS.	CODEx KENANENSIS.	CODEx USSERIANUS (r <sub>1</sub> ).
<p><b>Matt. xxiv.</b>  30. * apparebit <i>pro</i> par.  † fili <i>pro</i> filii.  plangent + se.</p> <p>31. † mittit <i>pro</i> mittet.</p> <p>* angulis nentorum  <i>pro</i> nentis.  summo <i>pro</i> sum-  mis</p> <p>* <i>ad fin. vers.</i> + cum  coepererent (<i>sic</i>)  haec fieri respi-  cete et leuate cap-  put quoniam ad-  propeat redemp-  tio nostra.</p> <p><b>Matt. xxvi.</b>  24. <i>Ad init. vers.</i> + et.</p> <p>tradetur <i>pro</i> uadit.  <i>om.</i> de illo.  † tradetur <i>pro</i> tradi-  tur.  * non nasei homini  illi <i>pro</i> ei si pa-  tus non fuisset  homo ille.</p> <p>25. † traditurus eum  erat <i>pro</i> tradidit  eum.</p> <p>* illi + iesus.  26. * ipsis hautem man-  ducantibus <i>pro</i>  ceuantibus au-  tem eis.  † accipit <i>pro</i> accepit.  <i>om.</i> et <i>pri.</i>  et <i>pro</i> ac.  et dedit <i>pro</i> dedit-  que.  † dicens <i>pro</i> et ait.  † manducate <i>pro</i>  comedite  † est + enim.</p>	<p>apparebit <i>pro</i> par.</p> <p>hominis quidem  (<i>ms.</i>) <i>pro</i> qui-  dem hominis.</p> <p>† tradetur <i>pro</i> tra-  ditur.  <i>om.</i> ei.</p> <p>† traditurus eum  erat <i>pro</i> tradi-  dit eum.</p> <p>† accipit <i>pro</i> accepit.</p>	<p>apparebit <i>pro</i> par.</p> <p>plangent (<i>ms.</i>)  super se <i>pro</i>  plangent.  † nubus (<i>ms.</i>) <i>pro</i>  nubibus.</p> <p>suos <i>pro</i> eius.  uentis + et.</p> <p><i>Ad init. vers.</i> + et.</p> <p>eo <i>pro</i> illo.  † tradetur <i>pro</i> tra-  ditur.  non natus <i>pro</i> na-  tus non.</p> <p>respondit <i>pro</i> re-  spondens.</p> <p>traditurus erat  eum <i>pro</i> tradi-  dit eum.  eum + et.  dixit + ei.  illi + iesus.</p> <p>† accipit <i>pro</i> accepit.</p> <p>dicens <i>pro</i> et ait.  edite ex hoc omnes  <i>pro</i> et comedite.  est + enim;  <i>ad fin. vers.</i> + quod  confringitur <i>pro</i>  saeculi vita.</p>	<p>* apparebit <i>pro</i> par.</p> <p>lamentabun[t] <i>pro</i>  plangent.</p> <p>congrega[n]tur (?) <i>pro</i>  congregabunt.</p> <p>* angulis uent[o]rum <i>pro</i>  uentis.</p> <p>summ[a] illorum <i>pro</i>  terminos eorum.</p> <p>* <i>ad fin. vers.</i> + cum coe-  perint autem haec  fieri respicitae et  leuate capud quia  adpr[opinguet] re-  demptio nostra.</p> <p>(<i>hiat r<sub>1</sub>.</i>)</p> <p>† uadet <i>pro</i> uadit.  eo <i>pro</i> illo.  * tradetur <i>pro</i> traditur.</p> <p>* non nasei hom[ini] illi  <i>pro</i> ei si natus non  fuisset homo ille.</p> <p>iudas + scarioth.</p> <p>* tr[adi]turus eum erat  <i>pro</i> tradidit eum.</p> <p>* illi + iesus.  * ipsis autem manu-  can[t]ibus <i>pro</i> ceu-  antibus autem eis.</p> <p>iesus accepit <i>pro</i> ace-  iesus.</p> <p>(<i>hiat r<sub>1</sub>.</i>)</p> <p>* dicens <i>pro</i> et ait.  ma[nducate] <i>pro</i> co-  medite.  * est + enim.</p>

## B 1—continued.

LIBER MULLING.	CODEx DURMACHIENSIS.	CODEx KENANENSIS.	CODEx USSERIANUS (r <sub>1</sub> ).
<b>Matt. xxvi.</b>			
27. † bibete <i>pro</i> bibite.	† effundetur (ms.) <i>pro</i> effunditur.	effundetur <i>pro</i> uobis et promul- tis <i>pro</i> pro mul- tis effunditur.	† effundetur <i>pro</i> effun- ditur.
28.			
*† remissione <i>pro</i> re- missionem.	† remissione (ms.) <i>pro</i> remissionem.	nobis + quia. † gemine (ms.) <i>pro</i> genimine.	*† remissione (ms.) <i>pro</i> remissionem.
29. * nobis + quia.		† gemine (ms.) <i>pro</i> genimine.	* uobis + quia. ac creatura <i>pro</i> hoc genimine.
diem illum cum illud <i>pro</i> diem cum illum.	diem illum cum illum <i>pro</i> diem cum illum.	diem illum quo illud <i>pro</i> diem cum illum.	illud diem cum illud <i>pro</i> diem cum illum.
30.			
31.			om. illis. (ista = A (ms.))
<b>Matt. xxvii.</b>			
20.	principes <i>pro</i> prin- ceps.	principes <i>pro</i> prin- ceps.	principes <i>pro</i> princeps.
' populo <i>pro</i> populis haudem <i>pro</i> uero.			* populo <i>pro</i> populis. autem <i>pro</i> uero.
21. * de duobus dimit- tam nobis <i>pro</i> uobis de duobus dimitti.	om. uobis (ms.).	dimittam <i>pro</i> di- mitti.	* [de] duobus uobis di- mittam <i>pro</i> uobis de duobus dimitti.
22. † qui <i>pro</i> quid. * ergo <i>pro</i> igitur.			* ergo <i>pro</i> igitur. [facia]mus <i>pro</i> faciam. om. de.
23. om. illis. pilatus <i>pro</i> praeses.	† praesit (ms.) <i>pro</i> praeses. om. magis (ms.).	clamauerunt <i>pro</i> clamabant.	om. dicentes. se nihil [pro]ficere <i>pro</i> quia n. proficeret. tumultum fieri <i>pro</i> tumultus fieret.
24. proficit <i>pro</i> pro- ficeret.			[ac]cepit aquam <i>pro</i> accepta aqua.
† fieri <i>pro</i> fieret.			* manus + snas.
fieri. + in populo.			
† lauanit <i>pro</i> lauit.		coram + omni.	
* manus + snas. dicens coram po- pulo <i>pro</i> coram p. d.		ego innocens <i>pro</i> innoc. ego.	sum ego <i>pro</i> ego sum.
* om. iusti.		respondit <i>pro</i> re- spondens.	* om. iusti (e spat.).
25.			omnis turba <i>pro</i> uni- uersus populus.
* huius <i>pro</i> eius.		uestros <i>pro</i> nostros. uero <i>pro</i> autem.	* huius <i>pro</i> eius.
26.			flagellis caesum <i>pro</i> flagellatum.
eum crucifigeret <i>pro</i> crucifigeretur.			* eum crucifigeret <i>pro</i> crucifigeretur.



B 1—*continued.*

LIBER MULLING.	CODEx DURMACHENSIS.	CODEx KENANENSIS.	CODEx USSERIANUS (r <sub>1</sub> ).
<p>Matt. xxvii.</p> <p>27. * duxerunt <i>pro</i> sus- cipientes. * praetorium <i>pro</i> praetorio. * praet. + et.</p>			<p>* duxerunt <i>pro</i> susci- pientes. praet[orium] <i>pro</i> praec- torio. * praet. + [et].</p>

## B 2.

<p>Luc. v.</p> <p>6. ut <i>pro</i> eum. multitudinem pis- cium <i>pro</i> pis. m. * ita ut rumperentur <i>pro</i> rumpebatur autem. * retia <i>pro</i> rete. 7. tunc <i>pro</i> et <i>pro</i>.</p> <p>* socis + suis. qui cum <i>pro</i> et <i>tert</i>. <i>om.</i> et <i>quart</i>. * repleverunt <i>pro</i> impleuerunt.</p> <p>8. hoc uiso <i>pro</i> quod cum uideret. * <i>om.</i> Petrus. † procedit <i>pro</i> pro- cidit. * dicens + rogo te.</p> <p>9. * timor <i>pro</i> stupor. * innasserat <i>pro</i> cir- cumdederat. * illum <i>pro</i> eum.</p> <p>10. * dixit <i>pro</i> ait.</p> <p>* eris homines <i>pro</i> hom. eris.</p> <p>11. * nauculis in terram <i>pro</i> ad t. nauibus. * eum <i>pro</i> illum.</p> <p>Luc. viii.</p> <p>10. ait <i>pro</i> dixit. seire <i>pro</i> nosse. autem + non est datum sed. similitudinibus <i>pro</i> parabolis.</p>	<p>ita ut rumpeba- tur hautem <i>pro</i> rump. autem.</p> <p>uidisset <i>pro</i> uideret.</p> <p>† procedit <i>pro</i> pro- cidit.</p> <p>me + domine. <i>om.</i> domine.</p>	<p>* ita ut ru[m]perentur <i>pro</i> rump. autem.</p> <p>* retia <i>pro</i> rete.</p> <p>innuerunt <i>pro</i> annu. * sociis + suis.</p> <p>* repleuerunt <i>pro</i> impl.</p> <p>ut <i>sec.</i> + paene. uidisset <i>pro</i> uideret.</p> <p>* <i>om.</i> Petrus.</p> <p>* dicens + rogo te. quoniam <i>pro</i> quia.</p> <p>* timor <i>pro</i> stupor. * innasserat <i>pro</i> circum- dederat. * illum <i>pro</i> eum. † capturam <i>pro</i> captura. autem + et. * dixit <i>pro</i> ait. iesus ad simonem <i>pro</i> ad s. iesus. * eris homines <i>pro</i> hom. eris. unificans <i>pro</i> capiens. * nauculis in terram <i>pro</i> ad t. nauibus. * eum <i>pro</i> illum.</p>
--	---	---

## B 2—continued.

LIBER MULLING.	CODEx DURMACHENSIS.	CODEx KENANENSIS.	CODEx USSERIANUS (r <sub>1</sub> ).
<p><b>Luc. viii.</b>            11. hac est hautem <i>pro</i>            est autem haec.            similitudo <i>pro</i> pa-            rabola.</p> <p>12. quod <i>pro</i> qui.            autem + cecidit.</p> <p>hii sunt <i>pro</i> sunt hi.            * audiunt + uerbum.</p> <p>uenit hautem <i>pro</i>            deinde nen.            tulit <i>pro</i> tollit.            * de corde eorum            uerbum <i>pro</i> u.            de c. eorum.</p> <p>13.</p> <p>petrosam <i>pro</i> pet-            ram.</p> <p>* + hi sunt <i>ante</i> qui.            audiunt <i>pro</i> audi-            erint.</p> <p>* + uerbum <i>ante</i> cum  <i>sec.</i></p> <p>* accipiunt <i>pro</i> suse.</p> <p>* illud <i>pro</i> uerbum.</p> <p>non habent <sup>h</sup> radi-            ces <i>pro</i> radicem            non h.</p> <p>* † quia <i>pro</i> qui.</p> <p>14. audiunt <i>pro</i> audi-            erunt.</p> <p>per sollicitudinem  <i>pro</i> sollicitudini-            bus.</p> <p>diuitiarum <i>pro</i> et            diuitiis.</p> <p>dulcedinis <i>pro</i> uol-            uptatibus.</p> <p>* om. euntes.            * adferunt <i>pro</i> refer-            unt.</p>	<p>autem + uerbum.</p> <p>accipiunt (ms.) <i>pro</i>            suse. .</p> <p>radices (ms.) <i>pro</i>            radicem.</p> <p>om. et sec. (ms.).            tribulationis <i>pro</i>            temptationis.</p> <p>a sollicitudinibus            (ms.) <i>pro</i> soll.</p> <p>uoluntatibus (ms.)  <i>pro</i> uolupt.</p>	<p>tulit <i>pro</i> tollit.</p> <p>accipiunt <i>pro</i> suse.</p> <p>radices <i>pro</i> ra-            dicem.</p> <p>† quia <i>pro</i> qui.</p> <p>tribulationis <i>pro</i>            temptationis.</p> <p>a sollicitudinibus  <i>pro</i> soll.</p>	<p>haec autem <i>pro</i> est            autem haec.            similitudo <i>pro</i> para-            bola.            + qui seminat est filius            hominis <i>ante</i> semen.            semen + autem.</p> <p>niam + seminati sunt.            hi sunt <i>pro</i> sunt hi.            audiunt + * uerbum' in            cordibus suis.</p> <p>de corde illorum uer-            bum <i>pro</i> u. de c.            eorum.            uti ne credant et <i>pro</i> ne            credentes.            qui autem <i>pro</i> nam            qui.</p> <p>petram + seminatisunt.            + hi sunt <i>ante</i> qui.</p> <p>* + uerbum <i>ante</i> cum  <i>sec.</i></p> <p>* accipiunt <i>pro</i> suse.</p> <p>illud <i>pro</i> uerbum.            ipsi <i>pro</i> hi.            radices <i>pro</i> radicem.</p> <p>† quia <i>pro</i> qui.</p> <p>(et in tempore temta-            tionis recedunt = A            [ms.].)            cum audierint <i>pro</i> audi-            erunt.            aud. + uerbum.            om. et pri.            in sollicitudinibus <i>pro</i>            soll.</p> <p>uoluptatibus <i>pro</i> uol-            uptatibus.            uitae + huius saeculi.</p> <p>* om. euntes.            * adferunt <i>pro</i> referunt.</p>

A cursory inspection of these collations reveals immediately a remarkable difference between them and those with which we were previously occupied. Two facts at once strike us. The column which stands in closest relation to the first is no longer the third, but the fourth; and the number of asterisks in the first and fourth columns in proportion to the total number of readings has increased. Once more our first impression is borne out by a count. The number of various readings recorded for  $\mu$  is 95, for  $r_1$  99, for *Durm* 16, for Q 39. And of the 95 variants in  $\mu$  and 99 in  $r_1$ , 51, or more than half, are marked with an asterisk. This suggests that the part of  $\mu$  with which we are now concerned has a text substantially Old Latin with Vulgate mixture, rather than, as the remainder, a text substantially Vulgate with Old Latin readings. The relative number of variants in *Durm*, Q, and  $r_1$  has not materially changed, while that in  $\mu$  has been almost trebled. Again, the number of asterisks has advanced from 14 in 43, to 51 in 95. This is what we might expect to find if the text before us is really Old Latin. For the variations of any Irish Biblical codex from the Vulgate fall into two classes—errors of transcription and Old Latin readings. The number of the former would be about equal in two copies written under similar conditions; the latter will of course vary in proportion to the remoteness of the manuscript from the Old Latin type. Assuming, therefore, that there was one Old Latin recension in Ireland, the number of agreements in variation from the Vulgate between any two copies of that recension will be greater in proportion to the whole number of variations than between two manuscripts, one of which is mainly Vulgate and the other mainly Old Latin.

Now the passages of  $\mu$  which have just been collated with A do not stand alone. The same test applied to the two passages, extending—to speak roughly—from the middle of St Matthew xxiv. to near the end of the Gospel, and in St Luke from the beginning of chap. iv. almost to the end of chap. ix., brings to light exactly similar phenomena. The text of these two passages is absolutely different in type from that which appears throughout the remainder of the Synoptic Gospels. It is essentially Old Latin.

It is naturally difficult to determine, within a verse or two, the exact points at which these Old Latin portions of our Book begin and end. It can be done, however, with more precision than might have been anticipated, as my third series of collations will demonstrate.

## C 1.

LIBER MULLING.	CODEx DURMACHENSIS.	CODEx KENANENSIS.	CODEx USSERIANUS ( <i>r</i> <sub>1</sub> ).
<b>Matt. xxiv.</b>			
1. accesserunt + ad eum. aedificationem <i>pro</i> aedificationes.		accesserunt + ad eum. aedificationem <i>pro</i> aedificationes.	structuram <i>pro</i> aedificationes.
2. illis <i>pro</i> eis.	illis ( <i>ms.</i> ) <i>pro</i> eis.	illis <i>pro</i> eis.	[e]is dixit <i>pro</i> dixit eis. <i>om.</i> hic. <i>om.</i> eo. in monte <i>pro</i> super montem.
3.			discipuli + eius.
4.			discipuli + eius. ( <i>hiat usque</i> -educat <i>r</i> <sub>1</sub> .) ( <i>hiat usque</i> meo et a christus usque -ent <i>r</i> <sub>1</sub> .)
5.			
6. * audietis, haitem <i>pro</i> audituri enim estis.	autem ( <i>ms.</i> ) <i>pro</i> enim.	audietis enim <i>pro</i> audituri enim estis.	* audietis enim <i>pro</i> audituri enim estis.
7.			pugn[as] <i>pro</i> proelia. proeliorum + sed. exsurget <i>pro</i> consurget. contra <i>pro</i> in ( <i>bis</i> ).
8.	enim <i>pro</i> autem.		<i>om.</i> pestilentiae et. [omnia] haec <i>pro</i> haec autem omnia.
9. † tribulationem <i>pro</i> tribulatione.	† tribulationem <i>pro</i> tribulatione.	† tribulationem <i>pro</i> tribulatione.	
10. * inuicem <i>pro</i> + se.		inuicem <i>pro</i> + se.	inuicem <i>pro</i> + se. occid[ent . . .] <i>pro</i> odio habebunt.
11. insurgent <i>pro</i> surgent.		insurgent ( <i>ms.</i> ) <i>pro</i> surgent.	exsurgent] <i>pro</i> surgent.
12.			multos seducent <i>pro</i> sed. mult. quia <i>pro</i> quoniam.
iniquitas + et. * † refrigerescet ( <i>sic</i> ) <i>pro</i> refrigerescet.	† refriget ( <i>ms. p. m.</i> ) <i>pro</i> refrigerescet.		† refrigerescit <i>pro</i> refrigerescet.
13. permanserit <i>pro</i> perseueraverit.	permanserit <i>pro</i> perseueraverit.	permanserit <i>pro</i> perseueraverit.	
14. * per totum orbem <i>pro</i> in universo orbe.	† orbe regni in universo ( <i>ms.</i> ) <i>pro</i> regni in universo orbe.		* per totum ( <i>ms.</i> ) orbem <i>pro</i> in universo orbe.
15. haitem <i>pro</i> ergo.			( <i>hiat ab hoc usque</i> [reg]ni et ab in <i>sec.</i> usque -bus et ueniet consummatio <i>r</i> <sub>1</sub> .) ( <i>hiat usque</i> -tunc et ab -st usque intellegat <i>r</i> <sub>1</sub> .) [quod die]tum [est] <i>pro</i> quae dicti sunt. aliqua uerba omissa sunt ( <i>e spat.</i> ).
per danielum profetam <i>pro</i> a danielo propheta.			

Taking first the early part of St Matt. xxiv., it will probably be agreed that there is no sign of an Old Latin base up to the end of v. 11. The variants in  $r_1$  number *at least* (see vv. 4, 5) 17, in  $\mu$  only 7, in Q 8, and in *Durm* 3; of the seven readings in the first column, no more than two have an asterisk. Here, then, we have the ordinary mixed text. From verse 16 onwards, on the other hand, the text is Old Latin, as we have already shown. About the intervening verses it is impossible to speak with confidence. In vv. 12-14,  $\mu$  has three variants as against two in  $r_1$ ; *Durm* and Q have one each. This gives us little to go upon. It must be observed, moreover, that only a portion of v. 14 remains in  $r_1$ ; and that in the portion that is wanting the Codex Usserianus Alter ( $r_2$ ) has an important reading—"finis" for "consummatio"—while, on the other hand, the reading "permanesit" in v. 13 ( $\mu$  *Durm* Q) has every appearance of being an Old Latin survival, though unsupported by either  $r_1$  or  $r_2$ . In v. 15 our difficulties increase:  $\mu$  registers two variants, one of which is supported by  $r_2$ ; *Durm* Q give none at all;  $r_1$ , in the few letters that remain, two (one of which is an inference from the insufficiency of the space to contain the words of A). On the whole, I am inclined to think that the Old Latin text begins with v. 12; but if not, then certainly somewhere between the end of v. 11 and the beginning of v. 16.

What seems important to observe is, that the change in the type of text takes place suddenly. There is no gradual increase of Old Latin mixture, culminating in the almost total disappearance of the Vulgate element. We may fairly conclude from the facts that if  $r_1$  were not so fragmentary just where we need its help most, in vv. 14, 15, we could fix, within a line or two of our manuscript, the place where the Vulgate and the Old Latin texts meet.

So much, then, for the starting-place of the Old Latin text in St Matthew. Where does it end? A collation of 25 verses of chapter xxvii. (vv. 40-64), which it would occupy too much space to print here, shows that the relation between the texts of  $r_1$  and  $\mu$  remains much the same as in the previous chapter. At the same time, however, we notice a considerable numerical increase in the variants of Q. The numbers are: readings in  $\mu$  43, in  $r_1$  36 or more, in Q 33, in *Durm* 12, asterisks 23 or more. Our manuscript has therefore still an Old Latin text, while the Old Latin element in Q has become more marked. Let us now, therefore, collate the passage extending from xxvii. 65 to xxviii. 15, in order that we may determine, if possible, how far the Old Latin character of  $\mu$  is maintained.

## C 2.

LIBER MULLING.	CODEx DURMACHENSIS.	CODEx KENANENSIS.	CODEx USSERIANUS (r <sub>1</sub> ).
<b>Matt. xxvii.</b>			
65. * milites <i>pro</i> custo- diani.		milites <i>pro</i> custo- diani.	* milites <i>pro</i> custodiani. ite + et.
+ ipsi <i>ante</i> scitis.			
66. <i>om.</i> abeuntes.		abeuntes + cum custodibus.	et signauerunt <i>pro</i> sig- nantes.
* et signauerunt <i>pro</i> signantes.			
lapidem + et dis- cesserunt.		lapidem + et dis- cesserunt. <i>om.</i> cum custodi- bus.	
<b>Matt. xxviii.</b>			
1.			
2.		de caelo descendit <i>pro</i> descend. de e.	
3. haitem <i>pro</i> enim.	autem <i>pro</i> enim.	autem <i>pro</i> enim.	et erat <i>pro</i> erat enim. uestimenta <i>pro</i> uesti- mentum.
* uestimenta <i>pro</i> uestimentum.			eius <i>sec.</i> + [ca]udida.
* eius <i>sec.</i> + candida.		eius <i>sec.</i> + candi- dum.	a <i>pro</i> prae. sicut <i>pro</i> velut.
4.		uel moltui ( <i>ms.</i> ) <i>pro</i> uelut mor- tui.	q[ui]aueritis q[ui] crucifixus est <i>pro</i> qui e. est q.
5.			
6.		hic + sed.	dixerat <i>pro</i> dixit. uenite + et. ( <i>hiat ab -ocum usque ad</i> <i>fin. vers. r<sub>1</sub>.</i> )
* uenite + et.	uenite + et ( <i>ms.</i> ).	uenite + et.	
7. surrexit + a mor- tuis.		surrexit + a mor- tuis.	ite [et] <i>pro</i> euntes.
<i>om.</i> ecce <i>pri.</i> sicut praedixit <i>pro</i> ecce praedixi.	<i>om.</i> ecce praedixi uobis ( <i>ms.</i> ).	sicut dixit <i>pro</i> ecce praedixi.	( <i>hiat ab [et] usque ad</i> <i>timore v. 8 r<sub>1</sub>.</i> )
8. gaudio magno <i>pro</i> magno gaudio.	gaudio magno <i>pro</i> mag. gaud.	gaudio magno <i>pro</i> mag. gaud.	* gaudio magno] <i>pro</i> mag. gaud.
* et current <i>pro</i> cur- rentes.			* [et current] ( <i>ms.</i> ) <i>pro</i> currentes. (nuntiate [ms.] = A.)
	+ aduerunt ( <i>ms.</i> <i>p. m.</i> ) <i>pro</i> ado- rauerunt.	stis <i>pro</i> eius.	
9. † habete <i>pro</i> haue- te.			† ille <i>pro</i> illae.
<i>om.</i> autem. accesserunt + ad eum.			
10. timere + sed.		timere + sed ( <i>ms.</i> ).	amplexerunt <i>pro</i> tenu- erunt.
			quia praecedo uo[s] <i>pro</i> ut eant. galilaeam + et.
11.	† et + et ( <i>ms.</i> ).	adnuntiauerunt ( <i>ms.</i> ) <i>pro</i> nunt.	sunt <i>pro</i> fuerant. consilium acceperunt[†] <i>pro</i> consilio accepto. <i>om.</i> copiosam.
12.			
13. uenerunt nocte <i>pro</i> nocte uen.			persuade] binus <i>pro</i> suad. ( <i>hiat r<sub>1</sub>.</i> )
14.			
15. instructi <i>pro</i> docti.	† deuulgatum ( <i>ms.</i> ) <i>pro</i> diu.	edocti <i>pro</i> erant docti. † deuulgatum ( <i>ms.</i> ) <i>pro</i> diu.	† deuulgatum <i>pro</i> diu. hoc <i>pro</i> istud.

It will be seen at once that there is a sudden change in the relation between  $\mu$  and  $r_1$  after xxviii. 3. For xxvii. 65—xxviii. 3 the collation yields the following figures:  $\mu$  8,  $r_1$  6, Q 7, *Durm* 1, asterisks 4. The ratio of these numbers agrees pretty closely with that of those already given for xxvii. 40–64. But for xxviii. 4–15 the result is different. Here we get  $\mu$  11,  $r_1$  16 or more, Q 10, *Durm* 3, asterisks 3 or more. The sudden decrease in the number of readings in  $\mu$  and the almost more notable disappearance of asterisks are remarkable. Our conclusion is that the Old Latin text ends with xxviii. 3. This conclusion, however, could not, with the evidence now given, be held with absolute confidence, for the proportion of the variants of  $\mu$  to those of  $r_1$  is considerably larger than in the greater part of the manuscript. This might perhaps be accounted for by the specially imperfect state of  $r_1$  just here, or by a greater amount than usual of Vulgate mixture in its text. But to place the matter beyond doubt, let us apply another test. The Clermont manuscript in the Vatican Library (*h*) agrees more closely than any other Old Latin manuscript of St Matthew with the Irish text. We may use it, then, in place of  $r_1$  in these verses. Now let us examine the following collations of  $\mu$ , *Durm*, Q, and *h* for St Matt. xxviii. 4–20.

LIBER MULLING.	CODEx DURMACHENSIS.	CODEx KENANENSIS.	CODEx CLAROMONTANUS (h).
<b>Matt. xxviii.</b>			
1.		nel moltui ( <i>ms.</i> ) <i>pro</i> uelut mor- tui.	a <i>pro</i> prae.
5.			quia <i>pro</i> quod.
6.		hic + sed.	dixerat <i>pro</i> dixit.
* uenite + et.	uenite + et ( <i>ms.</i> ).	uenite + et.	uenite + et. sed <i>pro</i> et <i>pri.</i> ite et <i>pro</i> euntes.
surrexit + a mor- tuis.		surrexit + a mor- tuis.	<i>om.</i> ecce <i>pri.</i>
<i>om.</i> ecce <i>pri.</i>			† praecedet <i>pro</i> praecedit. dixi <i>pro</i> praedixi.
sicut praedixit <i>pro</i> ecce praedixi.	<i>om.</i> ecce praedixi uobis ( <i>ms.</i> ).	sicut dixit <i>pro</i> ecce praedixi.	
8. gaudio magno <i>pro</i> magno gaudio. et current <i>pro</i> cur- rentes.	gaudio magno <i>pro</i> magno gaudio.	gaudio magno <i>pro</i> magno gaudio.	gaudio magno <i>pro</i> mag- no gaudio. occurrentes <i>pro</i> cur- rentes.
9. † habete <i>pro</i> haetec <i>om.</i> autem. accesserunt + ad eum.		suis <i>pro</i> eius.	† habete <i>pro</i> haetec.
10. timere + sed.		timere + sed ( <i>ms.</i> ).	amplexauerunt <i>pro</i> tenuerunt.
			ite + et. quia praecedo uos <i>pro</i> ut eant. galileam + et. uidebitis <i>pro</i> uidebunt. † ciuitate <i>pro</i> ciuitatem.
11.	† et + et ( <i>ms.</i> ).	adnuntiauerunt ( <i>ms.</i> ) <i>pro</i> nun- tiauerunt.	
12.			sunt <i>pro</i> fuerant. consilium acceperunt et <i>pro</i> consilio ac- cepto.
13.			magnam <i>pro</i> copiosam. et dixerunt <i>pro</i> dicen- tes. + illis ante dicite.
uenerunt nocte <i>pro</i> nocte uenerunt.			audierit praesis <i>pro</i> auditum fuerit a praeside. persuademus <i>pro</i> sua- debimus.
15. * instructi <i>pro</i> docti.		edocti <i>pro</i> erant docti.	* instructi <i>pro</i> docti.
	† denulgatum ( <i>ms.</i> ) <i>pro</i> diuulgatum.	† denulgatum ( <i>ms.</i> ) <i>pro</i> diuulgatum. discipuli + eius ( <i>ms.</i> ).	hoc <i>pro</i> istud.
16.	† consituerat ( <i>ms.</i> ) <i>pro</i> constit.		
17.			cum uidissent <i>pro</i> ui- dentes.
18.		(iesus = Am ( <i>ms.</i> )).	† est + est.
19.		+ uunc ante do- cete.	<i>om.</i> ergo.
* + nunc ante do- cete.		obseruare <i>pro</i> ser- uare.	* + nunc ante docete.
20. obseruare <i>pro</i> ser- uare.	<i>om.</i> amen ( <i>ms.</i> ).		<i>om.</i> amen.



It is not too much to say that our inference is completely established by the foregoing table. The Codex Claromontanus yields 28 variants against 4 in *Durm*, 12 in  $\mu$  and 13 in Q, while the asterisks have dwindled to five. The Old Latin fragment of St Matthew therefore begins at or a little after xxiv. 12 and ends at xxviii. 3.

Now let us turn to St Luke. That the portion upon which the genealogy immediately follows (iii. 19-23) is mixed Vulgate will be evident from the collation A 3. Omitting the genealogy, an examination of which would be valueless for our purpose, we next collate the early verses of chapter iv.

## D 1.

LIBER MULLING.	CODEx DURMACHENSIS.	CODEx KENANENSIS.	CODEx USSERIANUS (r <sub>1</sub> ).
<b>Luc. iv.</b>			
1. deserto <i>pro</i> desertum.			repletus <i>pro</i> plenus. reversus <i>pro</i> regressus. deserto <i>pro</i> desertum.
2. +in <i>ad init. vers.</i>		+in <i>ad init vers.</i>	
+illis diebus <i>pro</i> diebus illis.		his <i>pro</i> illis <i>sec.</i>	per dies <i>pro</i> diebus. (et tem.( <i>ms.</i> )=A.) illis diebus <i>pro</i> diebus illis. his <i>pro</i> illis <i>sec.</i>
+esurit <i>pro</i> esuriit.			+postea <i>ante</i> esuriit. ut lapides [i]sti panes fiant <i>pro</i> lapidi huic ut panis fiat.
3.			<i>om. et.</i> illi <i>pro</i> ad illum.
4. iesus+dicens.			<i>om. quia.</i>
+niuit <i>pro</i> uinet.		+niuit <i>pro</i> uinet.	
5. * illum+iterum. * diabolus+in mon- tem excelsum ualde. ei <i>pro</i> illi. mundi <i>pro</i> orbis terrae.		zabulus+in mon- tem excelsum ( <i>ms.</i> ).	<i>rv. 5-8 post vv. 9-12.</i> illum+iterum. diabolus+(in montem al)tissimum.
6.			dixit <i>pro</i> ait. illi <i>pro</i> ei : +diabolus.
ipsorum <i>pro</i> illo- rum. * noluo <i>pro</i> uolo.	noluo <i>pro</i> uolo.	noluo <i>pro</i> uolo.	* nol[u]o <i>pro</i> uolo. dabo <i>pro</i> do. +illam ( <i>ms.</i> ) <i>pro</i> illa.
7.	nero ( <i>ms.</i> ) <i>pro</i> ergo. <i>om. procidens.</i>	nero <i>pro</i> ergo. si cadens <i>pro</i> pro- cidens si.	si procedens <i>pro</i> pro- cidens si. <i>om. coram.</i>
<i>om. coram.</i> omnia tua <i>pro</i> tua omnia.			
8.			dixit illi iesus <i>pro</i> iesus d. i. iesus + uade post me satanas.
est+enim.			diliges dominum deum tuum <i>pro</i> d. d. t. adorabis.
9. <i>om. soli.</i> eum <i>pro</i> illum.			illum+diabolus.
ei <i>pro</i> illi. quoniam <i>pro</i> quod.	+illis <i>pro</i> illi.		
* mandauit <i>pro</i> man- dabit. custodiant <i>pro</i> con- seruent.	+mandauit <i>pro</i> man- dabit.	+mandauit <i>pro</i> man- dabit.	+mandauit <i>pro</i> man- dabit. te conseruent <i>pro</i> cons. te.
11. <i>om. et.</i> manibus + suis.	<i>om. et.</i> manibus + suis ( <i>ms.</i> ).	<i>om. et.</i> manibus+tuus.	<i>om. quia.</i> +tollant <i>pro</i> tollent.

An analysis of this collation makes it clear, as I believe, that a sudden change in the character of the text takes place at the end of verse 4. For vv. 1-4 the numbers are,  $\mu$  4, *Durm* 0, Q 2,  $r_1$  11, asterisks 2; while for vv. 5-11 we have  $\mu$  17, *Durm* 5, Q 6,  $r_1$  15, asterisks 4. The beginning of the Lucan Old Latin fragment is therefore to be placed at verse 5. Its close may with no less confidence be assigned to ix. 54. Scarcely any part of the manuscript agrees so closely with  $r_1$  as Luke ix. 45-54. As our collations of passages in this Gospel have not been numerous, we give a comparison of the four texts for these verses and a few which follow them in full, in order that the complete change which occurs in  $\mu$  at v. 54 may the more easily appear. The number of variants are, for vv. 45-54,  $\mu$  27, *Durm* 6, Q 9,  $r_1$  29 or more, asterisks 17; for vv. 55-62,  $\mu$  11, *Durm* 8, Q 7,  $r_1$  23, asterisks 3. Our second Old Latin fragment therefore includes Luke iv. 5—ix. 54.

## D 2

LIBER MULLING.	CODEx DURMACHENSIS.	CODEx KENANENSIS.	CODEx USSERIANUS ( $r_1$ ).
Luc. ix.			
45. hoc uerbum <i>pro</i> uerbum istud. erat hautem <i>pro</i> et erat. coopertum <i>pro</i> ue- latum. illis <i>pro</i> ante eos. intellegerent ( <i>sic</i> ) <i>pro</i> sentirent.	<i>om.</i> et <i>sec.</i> tenebant <i>pro</i> time- bant.	<i>om.</i> et <i>sec.</i>	hoc uerbum <i>pro</i> uer- bum istud. erat autem <i>pro</i> et erat. coopertum <i>pro</i> uela- tum. illos <i>pro</i> eos. intellegerent <i>pro</i> sen- tirent. <i>om.</i> illud.
46. * in eis cogitatio <i>pro</i> cog. in eos. <i>om.</i> maior.			in eos cogitatio <i>pro</i> cog. in eos.
47. * iesus hautem <i>pro</i> at iesus. * eorum <i>pro</i> illorum. adprehendit <i>pro</i> adprehendens. puerum + et. * <i>om.</i> eum. * <i>om.</i> illis.		eorum ( <i>ms.</i> ) <i>pro</i> illorum.	iesus autem <i>pro</i> at iesus. eorum <i>pro</i> illorum.
43. * acciperit <i>pro</i> sus- ceperit. † recipit <i>pro</i> recepit : * + non me recipit sed. * <i>om.</i> omnes.	† recipit <i>pro</i> recepit.	† recipit <i>pro</i> recepit : + non me recipit sed.	* <i>om.</i> eum. * <i>om.</i> illis. * acciperit <i>pro</i> suscep- erit. recepit <i>pro</i> recepit : * + non me recipit sed]. inter uos est <i>pro</i> est inter omnes uos. * ( <i>om.</i> omnes).

## D 2—continued.

LIBER MULLING.	CODEx DURMACHENSIS.	CODEx KENANENSIS.	CODEx USSERIANUS (r <sub>1</sub> ).
<p><b>Luc. ix.</b>  <b>49.</b> respondit <i>pro</i> respondens.  dicens <i>pro</i> dixit.  * magister <i>pro</i> praeceptor.</p>	<p>† immine (<i>ms.</i>) <i>pro</i> in nomine.</p>		<p>(<i>hiat r<sub>1</sub>.</i>)  dixit + ad iesum.  magister <i>pro</i> praeceptor.</p>
<p>50. † qui <i>pro</i> quia.  eum <i>pro</i> illum.  iesus + sinite eum et.</p>	<p><i>om.</i> qui enim.</p>	<p>iesus + sinite eum et.</p>	<p><i>om.</i> ad illum.  iesus + sinite eum et.</p>
<p>51. compleretur <i>pro</i> complerentur.</p>	<p>eum <i>pro</i> dum.</p>	<p>eum <i>pro</i> dum.</p>	<p><i>ad fin. vers.</i> + nemo est autem qui faciat virtutem in nomine meo et poterit male loqui de me.</p>
<p>* iret + in.</p>	<p>iret + in.</p>	<p>† et ipse + et ipse (<i>ms.</i>).  iret + in.</p>	<p>* iret + in.  euntes + nuntii.</p>
<p>52. illi + cenam.</p>		<p>illi + cenam.</p>	
<p>53. euntis + in.</p>		<p>† euntes <i>pro</i> euntis.  eunt. + in.</p>	<p>illum <i>pro</i> eum.  euntis + in.</p>
<p>54. * uidissent + hautem.  iohannes + et.</p>	<p>uidissent + autem.</p>	<p>uidissent + autem.</p>	<p>uidentes <i>pro</i> cum uidissent.  * uid. + autem.</p>
<p>† dicemus <i>pro</i> dicimus.</p>	<p>† igni (<i>ms.</i>) <i>pro</i> ignis.</p>		<p>dixerunt + ad iesum.  (<i>hiat r<sub>1</sub> a vis usque et co-.</i>)</p>
<p>55. <i>om.</i> cuius spiritus estis (<i>vide p. 34</i>).  <i>om.</i> filius . . . saluare (<i>vide p. 34</i>).</p>	<p><i>om.</i> et dixit usque estis.  <i>om.</i> filius usque saluare.</p>	<p><i>om.</i> et dixit usque estis.  <i>om.</i> filius usque saluare.</p>	<p>eos <i>pro</i> illos.  <i>ad fin. vers.</i> + sicut helias fecit.  e[on]nersus autem <i>pro</i> et conu.  + iesus <i>ante</i> increpavit.  quali spiritus <i>pro</i> cuius spiritus.  animas + hominum.</p>
<p>56. <i>om.</i> cuius spiritus estis (<i>vide p. 34</i>).  <i>om.</i> filius . . . saluare (<i>vide p. 34</i>).</p>	<p><i>om.</i> et dixit usque estis.  <i>om.</i> filius usque saluare.</p>	<p><i>om.</i> et dixit usque estis.  <i>om.</i> filius usque saluare.</p>	<p>† alium <i>pro</i> aliud.  et factum est <i>pro</i> f. est autem.  euntibus <i>pro</i> ambulantibus.</p>
<p>57. eum <i>pro</i> illum.</p>			<p>† uiam <i>pro</i> uia.  <i>om.</i> illi.</p>
<p>58. * nidos + ubi requiescant.</p>	<p>† foueant (<i>ms.</i>) <i>pro</i> foueas.  † capud + hūi (<i>ms.</i>).</p>	<p>nidos + ubi requiescent.</p>	<p>* nidos + ubi requiescant.  caput + sum.</p>

D 2—*continued*.

LIBER MULLING.	CODEx DURMACHENSIS.	CODEx KENANENSIS.	CODEx USSERIANUS (v <sub>1</sub> ).
<b>Luc. ix.</b>			
59.			et ait <i>pro</i> ait autem. † alterutrum <i>pro</i> alterum me <i>pro</i> mihi. et dixit <i>pro</i> dixitque : + * ei. om. ut.
60.	* dixitque + ei. om. ut mortui se- peliant.	dixitque + ei.	
	† sepelient (ms.) <i>pro</i> sepeliant.	† sepelient <i>pro</i> se- peliant.	
	nade + et.	adnuntiare (ms.) <i>pro</i> annuntia.	
61.	alter <i>pro</i> illi. om. sed.	alter <i>pro</i> illi.	ait autem <i>pro</i> et ait. alius <i>pro</i> illi.
	* nuntiare <i>pro</i> re- nunt.	qui + in.	* nuntiare <i>pro</i> renunt. meis <i>pro</i> his. in domo <i>pro</i> domi.
62.	om. suam.		dixit autem <i>pro</i> ait. illi <i>pro</i> ad illum. super <i>pro</i> in.

§ 4. *A Hypothesis.*

It may be well here to suggest a question which is not without interest. Granted that we have imbedded in Mulling's mixed text of the Gospels two fragments of genuine Old Latin,<sup>1</sup> how are we to account for this fact?

<sup>1</sup> The Book of Mulling is not unique in presenting the problem which we are attempting to solve. Readers of M. Berger's great work, *L'Histoire de la Vulgate pendant les premiers siècles du moyen âge*, will have observed many parallels. Such are the text of the Epistle to the Hebrews (Vulgate, except chaps. x., xi.) in Brit. Mus. Harl. 1772 (Berger, p. 51); the Book of Job in St Gall 11, in which the text of Jerome's first revision of the Old Latin gives place to another in the middle of a word at xxxviii. 15, the handwriting changing at the same time (p. 122); the Chartres St John, Paris, B.N. 10,439 (Old Latin chaps. i.-vi., approaching to Vulgate chaps. vii.-xv., adhering still more closely to the Vulgate chaps. xvi.-xxi.: Berger, p. 89); the Sapiential Books in Metz 7 (Vulgate up to the middle of Wisdom, thenceforth "an exceedingly mixed text, abounding in passages taken from the ancient versions:" p. 101); the text of Acts in the Rosas Bible, Paris, B.N. Lat. 6 (Vulgate, except xi. 1-xii. 8, which is European: p. 25); and, most striking of all, the text of Acts in Paris B.N. 321. This is so closely analogous to our manuscript that M. Berger's words (p. 77) may be quoted: "Le livre des Actes des Apôtres est composé de deux parties fort différentes. Le premier tiers, jusqu'au verset 7 du chapitre xiii., représente un texte mêlé dans lequel les éléments anciens tiennent une si grande place, que l'on peut à peu près le considérer comme un texte ancien. Le texte antérieur à saint Jérôme reprend à xviii. 15 et occupe le fin du livre. Malheureusement les leçons anciennes ont été le plus souvent corrigées par grattage, de sorte qu'il est quelquefois difficile de les retrouver. Entre ces deux limites, le texte semble être un texte meridional," etc. The change of a few words would make this an accurate description of the text of St Matthew in our Book. Other parallels are mentioned in the text.

It will conduce to clearness if, before giving what we believe to be the most probable answer to this question, we state a theory which is obviously suggested by the facts, and which for some time appeared to the writer sufficient to account for them.

Let us suppose that the scribe—the writer, that is, either of the manuscript actually before us, or of one from which it was copied—had before him a codex from which a few pages were missing. The text of this was mainly Vulgate. When he reached the lacunæ, the deficiencies of the primary exemplar were supplied from another, the text of which was pre-hieronymian.

The truth of this hypothesis is, of course, incapable of proof. But it accounts for the facts by which it is suggested, and it is confirmed by various considerations.

It supposes, be it observed, that the main exemplar of the scribe was an imperfect copy of the Vulgate. This is proved to have been the case in another instance—the Stowe St John. In the Stowe manuscript the lacunæ of the exemplar are not supplied in the copy.<sup>1</sup>

It supposes, again, that our scribe used two exemplars, preferring the Vulgate, but having recourse to the other, an Old Latin manuscript, in case of need. That two different types of text should be current side by side in Ireland in early times, and that copies of both should be found in the library of a single monastery, will not surprise those who have studied Mr Haddan's account<sup>2</sup> of the gradual progress of the Vulgate in these Islands, or M. Berger's abridgment of the story.<sup>3</sup> And more direct proof in the shape of parallel cases is not wanting. The scribe of the Book of Durrow had in his hands, in like manner, two manuscripts—one of the Vulgate, another of the Old Latin.<sup>4</sup> So, again, had the scribe of Ussher's Codex. Its text is pre-hieronymian, and so lacked the *Pericope Adulteræ*. This supposed deficiency is supplied from a Vulgate manuscript.<sup>5</sup> And, moreover, a similar hypothesis will be found to explain some of the phenomena of the Codex Usanianus Alter ( $r_2$ ). This manuscript Professor Abbott regards as preserving an Old Latin text in St Matthew. In the latter chapters it certainly does so, but I venture to think the fact is not so clearly made out in the earlier portion of the Gospel. I must not encumber these pages with needless collations. It will suffice therefore to say that of the first half of St Matthew's Gospel only three fragments remain—i. 18–ii. 6, iv. 24–v. 29, and xiii. 7–xiv. 1. In the two latter of these passages the variants of Q are almost identical in number with those of  $r_2$ ; in the first there is a decided preponderance on the side of the latter manuscript. Now the existing portions of chapters iv., v., and xiii. are quite long enough to

<sup>1</sup> J. H. Bernard in the *Transactions of the Royal Irish Academy*, xxx. p. 316.

<sup>2</sup> Haddan and Stubbs, *Councils and Ecclesiastical Documents relating to Great Britain and Ireland*, vol. i. p. 180 *sqq.*

<sup>3</sup> Berger, *L'Histoire*, p. 30.

<sup>4</sup> See above pp. 21, 39.

<sup>5</sup> Abbott, *Evangeliorum Versio*, p. vii.

enable us to come to a satisfactory judgment as to the character of the text of which they are fragments, and the fact just mentioned leaves no room for doubt that it was Vulgate with Old Latin mixture. When we reach chap. xvi., and more especially when v. 19 is passed, we at once perceive a change. The variants of  $r_2$  in xvi. 20-28 are nearly four times as numerous as those of Q.<sup>1</sup> May we not conclude that in  $r_2$  part of St Matthew's Gospel was copied from a mixed text, the remainder from a manuscript of an Old Latin version?

The hypothesis, therefore, which we have provisionally assumed to account for the phenomena of  $\mu$ , receives confirmation from the fact that a similar hypothesis serves to explain the textual features of the only other Irish Old Latin manuscripts of the Gospels known to exist.<sup>2</sup> And if we go a little further afield we shall find other parallels. Mr White<sup>3</sup> tells us, for example, that the Codex Palatinus (*c*) of the Old Latin, though mainly African, must have been copied from an ordinary European MS. in the last few chapters of St Luke; and he subjoins the remark that other similar instances of vacillation in the text of Old Latin manuscripts might be added. Dr Sanday, in like manner, suggests<sup>4</sup> that the last leaf of the archetype of *a* was lost or worn, and the text of this portion taken from some other copy. And a most interesting case of the same kind has recently been brought to light. The Earl of Crawford possesses a Syriac manuscript of the entire New Testament containing a version of the Apocalypse of which the only other known copy is a fragment in the British Museum. This version is akin to the Philoxenian rendering of the other New Testament books; but the exemplar from which the Crawford manuscript was copied had lost a leaf at the beginning, and the lacuna has been supplied from a manuscript of the later recension, akin to the Harkleian version, the *editio princeps* of which was published by De Dieu at Leyden in 1627, and which is now usually bound up with the Peshitto.<sup>5</sup>

<sup>1</sup> The numbers of the variants in the three MSS. *Durm*, Q,  $r_2$  for the passages mentioned in the text may be exhibited in a table. Mere variations of spelling and unmistakable blunders are not reckoned. Several readings of  $r_2$ , however, are counted, which are almost certainly errors of the scribe.

	i. 19-ii. 6.	iv. 24-v. 29.	xiii. 8-58.	xvi. 13-19.	xvi. 20-28.
<i>Durm</i>	5	7	21	2	3
Q	6	14	57	19	10
$r_2$	15	18	61	15	36

<sup>2</sup> Excluding, of course, the St Gall fragment (*p*).

<sup>3</sup> Scrivener's *Introduction*, 4th ed., ii. p. 56.

<sup>4</sup> *Old Latin Biblical Texts*, ii. p. clxxv.

<sup>5</sup> Full proof of this fact is given by Professor Gwynn in his paper "On a Syriac MS. of the New Testament belonging to the Earl of Crawford and Balcarres, and on an in-edited version of the Apocalypse therein contained": *Trans. R.I.A.*, vol. xxx. part x., App. E, p. 414. See also *The Apocalypse of St John in a Syriac Version hitherto unknown*, edited by John Gwynn, Dublin, 1897, part ii. p. 37.

Our hypothesis is therefore well supported by parallel cases. We have next to remark that it seems to account sufficiently for two curious readings, one at the beginning, the other at the end of the Lucan fragment. To begin with the latter. It is found in St Luke ix. 55, 56. Our Lord's answer to the question of the two disciples is there cut down by our scribe to the single word "Nescitis." In many Greek MSS. the entire answer and the two preceding words "et dixit" are omitted, and this reading is followed by the Books of Armagh, Kells, and Durrow, Ussher's second Codex, and other Irish Vulgate manuscripts. The scribe of the Book of Mulling is conscious that there is something wrong in his (apparently unique) reading. For immediately after writing "Nescitis" he adds *in his text* the letter "d" (= "desunt") and places in the upper margin the remaining words of the sentence, reading the last five words, if not the whole clause, as they are found in  $r_1$ , which here differs from the Vulgate. It is not difficult to suggest an explanation. After copying v. 54 from his Old Latin exemplar, the scribe turns once more to the manuscript whose text he preferred, and which now again becomes available. But his memory of the other codex is still fresh, and so he writes "et dixit nescitis" before he observes that these words, with those that follow them, are absent from the text which he is transcribing. He allows the words which he has written to stand in his text, inserts after them the mark indicating omission, and relegates the remainder, which he takes from his Old Latin manuscript, to the margin.

We turn now to St. Luke iv. 5—the first verse, as we have already seen, of the fragment. It opens with the words "Et duxit illum *iterum* diabolus." What is the antecedent of "*iterum*"? Plainly neither "Agebatur in spiritu" (v. 1), nor "Dixit autem illi diabolus" (v. 3). "*Iterum*" is in fact meaningless as the text stands. But rearrange the narrative according to the order of  $r_1$ , in which the third temptation, according to the Vulgate, precedes the second, and all becomes clear. We now have "Et duxit eum in hierusalem" (v. 9) . . . "Et duxit illum *iterum*" (v. 5). What has happened is evident. The scribe was copying from an exemplar in which the temptations were given in the order in which they are found in all European Old Latin manuscripts.<sup>1</sup> He transposed the last two, but in other respects preserved the text unchanged. Now what prompted this clumsy dislocation of the text? The answer which the hypothesis under consideration suggests is this. The scribe has before him a Vulgate text. Suddenly at v. 5 it deserts him; but enough remains

<sup>1</sup> So  $b, c, f, l, q, r_1$ . The Vercelli manuscript ( $a$ ) is no exception, for, in the first place, its text is not European in St Luke (Scrivener's *Introduction*, ii. 56); and moreover, though it here follows the African and Vulgate order, the marks of transposition in it are even clearer than in  $\mu$ . The opening words of v. 5 in it are, "Et adduxit eum *hierusalem et statuit eum supra pinnam templi et ostendit illi,*" etc. I know of no MS. except  $\mu$  which reads "*iterum*" in v. 5 while following the Vulgate order;  $e$ , however, has "*secundo,*"



to indicate that what immediately followed v. 4 in it was v. 5, and not, as in his secondary exemplar, to which he now turns, v. 9. It breaks off, let us suppose, with the words "*Et duxit illum diabolus et ostendit illi omnia*" . . . This is sufficient as a cue. Following it as well as he can, he transcribes vv. 5-8 exactly as they stand in his second copy, before turning to v. 9, not perceiving that in so doing he deprives "*iterum*" of all meaning.

In spite of the many arguments by which our preliminary hypothesis may be supported, it lies open to one objection, not indeed absolutely fatal, but sufficiently serious. The Gospels of St Matthew and St Luke are in our Book divided into sections, according to a system found in many Old Latin texts.<sup>1</sup> These divisions embrace the Old Latin as well as the mixed portions of the text. This fact in itself makes it probable that these Gospels were ultimately derived not from two copies, but from a single exemplar of the Old Latin text, altered by the hands of successive copyists to its present state.

This is not, it is true, a necessary inference. The Old Latin exemplar would most probably have these sections. But experience shows us that quite possibly a mixed copy might have them also; and so, on the supposition that our scribe used two exemplars, we are not absolutely prohibited from believing that both of them had sections such as we have mentioned. Probability, however, is against the supposition; and so we come to suggest another hypothesis, or rather a hypothesis which is that already proposed, but in a slightly modified form. It is this: Our scribe copied from an Old Latin exemplar, which we may call *x*. This manuscript had, however, been previously corrected by means of an imperfect copy of the Vulgate, *y*. Where *y* failed, the pre-hieronymian text remained; where it was available, the resulting text was mixed.

This hypothesis is supported by all the parallel instances which have been adduced above. It supposes, as before, in the hands of a scribe an imperfect Vulgate, *y*, evidently regarded as giving the better text, and an Old Latin, *x*. It explains, moreover, the reading "*iterum*" at iv. 5, just as readily as the other hypothesis. It accounts, too, though not so easily, for "*et dixit nescitis*" at ix. 56. The passage may have been expuncted in *x* by the corrector, though our scribe did not perceive the marks of deletion till he had written its first three words, or he may have mistaken the meaning of marks over the final words of the saying ascribed to Christ. It is, moreover, supported by the fact that in St Matthew and St Luke alone, the division into sections of the type referred to occurs. For these Gospels, therefore, and probably for these alone, we are obliged to suppose an ultimate Old Latin archetype. It will not, then, surprise us to find in them, and in them alone, a few pages passed over by the corrector, exhibiting an Old Latin text. And finally, it is supported by the fact that the Matthean Old Latin fragment is actually

<sup>1</sup> See above, p. 30 *sqq.*

corrected into conformity with the Vulgate, exactly in the way we have supposed *x* to have been corrected by means of *y*. But this will be seen more clearly in our next section.

### § 5. *The Corrector.*

We turn, then, to these corrections of the text with which our fragments are so thickly studded. These corrections are, so far as I can judge, all written by the same hand—the hand of him who added the marginal numbers. They were certainly in some cases made concurrently with or before the insertion of the numbers. This may be seen, for example, by an inspection of f. 47 *r* *a*, l. 25 (St Matt. xxvi. 1). Here the words “omnia verba hæc” have been erased, and in their room “sermones hos omnes” has been written. The correction extends, however, so far into the margin, that the number referring to the Eusebian Canon, which had to be inscribed opposite the corresponding line of the second column (l. 24, Matt. xxvi. 26), is placed more to the right than is customary; while, at the same time, the number of the section (cclxxiii.) is begun too high and written in a slanting direction, so that the last letter composing it is in its proper position.<sup>1</sup> Thus the correction of the first column was completed before the numbers of the second were written. And in the second column the first words of this section, as originally written, were “et manducantibus.” The word “et” is erased, a punctuation mark set in its place, and “Et (in prominent character) edentibus” written above the line. The text is altered in the very act of marking the beginning of the section. Thus it is quite clear that the corrector was identical with the numerator,<sup>2</sup> and that he did both parts of his work concurrently. It is important to note this fact, because it appears to lead us to a further inference. The emendations and the numerals must have been taken from the same exemplar. The large number of these emendations shows us how thoroughly (too thoroughly) the corrector accomplished his task in St Matthew’s Gospel. His purpose seems to have been to assimilate the text of  $\mu$  to that of the copy which he had in his hands. He was unsparing in the performance of this work, and we may be pretty confident that, except by oversight, he omitted to alter no word which differed from his codex. What, then, was the character of the manuscript from which the corrections

<sup>1</sup> Similar phenomena are found at Matt. xxii. 46 (xxiii. 23), xxiv. 26 (40), 27 (42), Luke xix. 25 (39), etc. Specially interesting is Matt. xxvii. 3 (facsimile page, col. b, ll. 16, 17). Here the corrector wished to transpose “eum tradidit.” He therefore wrote a double stroke under “eum,” and a single stroke over “tradidit” in the usual way. The latter was found to interfere with the signature, belonging to “Tunc.” Hence it was replaced by a single stroke under “tradidit.” Obviously the signature was written after the first and before the second of these single strokes.

<sup>2</sup> It may be remarked, in confirmation of this conclusion, that there is no perceptible difference of hand between words introduced with the sole purpose of emending the reading and those by which the beginnings of sections are marked.

were drawn? Any copy of the Latin Gospels which is furnished with the Eusebian Sections and Canons may be expected to contain a substantially Vulgate text. That this was the character of the text of the corrector's manuscript is proved by collating our first fragment, as it left his hands, with the Codex Amiatinus. In a very few instances an Amiatine reading is replaced by another: now and then one reading gives way to another, neither of which is Amiatine; but in the vast majority of cases, readings which differ from those found in A are obliged to make way for rivals which it supports. Let us take, for example, St Matt. xxiv. 21-31, which has been collated above (B 1). It occupies lines 1-31 of the first column of f. 46 r. In this passage  $\mu$  varies from A 16 times. In two cases the corrector introduces non-Amiatine readings, and in nine he brings our text into agreement with the Amiatine. He leaves therefore 7 variants. Q, in the same passage, has also 7. Examining in the same way St Matthew xxvii. 20-26, we find the 13 variants of  $\mu$  reduced by a similar process to 6, while again Q has 7. If we extended our inquiry further, the result would be to prove that the manuscript from which the Old Latin fragment was corrected was of much the same character as Q or the greater part of  $\mu$ ,—in fact, that it contained a mixed Vulgate text.

In the Lucan fragment the work of correction does not seem to have been done in so thorough-going a spirit as in St Matthew. Thus, in the two passages collated above (B 2),  $\mu$  has 45 variants, while there are only 6 corrections. Every one of these, however, is an assimilation to the Amiatine text. The manuscript, therefore, from which they were taken, if not the same, was at least probably of the same character as that which the diorthotes used in St Matthew.

Who, then, was the corrector? I have already stated my belief that the scribe who added the marginal numbers, and at the same time divided the Gospels into sections, revised the text as he went along. I must now express the further conviction that this reviser was identical with the original scribe (or with one of them, if there were several) of the manuscript. It is true some slight difference may be detected in the writing of the text and of the corrections. But the difference is not greater than that which is found to exist in many cases between two pages of the text itself. And, independently of this fact, a difference in the script was to be expected, owing to the difference of the conditions under which it was executed. A man naturally writes better when his letters are penned upon a blank sheet of well prepared vellum, than when he inserts them where he can find space between closely written lines or over erasures. And so the writing of the text in our fragments is *better* than the writing of the emendations, but the difference extends, as I believe, no further. It is quite consistent with identity of hand.

But, again, if we suppose that the corrections are not due to the first hand, we are driven to one or other of two conclusions. The

Book of Mulling consists of five gatherings, forming what the colophon calls separate "volumina." The last four of these contain the evangelical text with some additions. The first is occupied with Jerome's letter to Damasus and other similar matter, including the Eusebian Canons. If we do not admit that our corrections and numerals are by the hand of the writer of the bulk of the manuscript, we are bound, therefore, to believe, either that the first gathering was penned by a different scribe from the last four,—in other words, that it is not really part of the Book of Mulling properly so called,—or that a manuscript, provided with a table of the Canons, was nevertheless unsupplied with the sections and marginal numbers, which were absolutely necessary if the table was to have either use or meaning.

It must be admitted indeed that the latter alternative is neither impossible nor without example. The Book of Armagh, for example, has the table of canons without the marginal numbers. Not only so. Its Gospel text is divided into regular sections, the beginnings of which are usually indicated, as in our Book, by capitals set out in the margin : and these sections are clearly quite independent of the Eusebio-Ammonian division. The Book of Armagh is therefore an exact parallel to our manuscript, supposing the latter to have been left by its original scribe without indication in the text, by numbers or otherwise, of the Eusebian sections. But even though the phenomena of the Book of Mulling may be illustrated by those of one or two other codices, we are still entitled to assert that the supposition which we are now discussing is *a priori* improbable. Nothing could be more natural than that a scribe who had added to his Gospel text the usual prefatory matter, should afterwards, when revising his work, bring the latter into agreement with the former in the way we have supposed.

On the other hand, the hypothesis that the scribe of the first "volumen" was different from that of the other four, does not seem to have occurred to such palæographers as Westwood and Gilbert. The writing of the first gathering does indeed present a different appearance from that of the Gospels to a superficial observer ; it is larger, and it is written all across the page, instead of in columns. But the form and character of the letters are similar ; the abbreviations used are, so far as I have observed, the same in both cases ; and I see, therefore, no reason to suppose a difference of hand.<sup>1</sup> It may, then, perhaps be granted that it is at least the more probable view that the entire manuscript (with the exception of the office for the Visitation of the Sick), including prefatory matter, numerals, and corrections, was the work of a single scribe. Assuming this to be true, and assuming also<sup>2</sup> that this scribe was not the Mulling of the colophon, but one who copied from him, we are now in a position to construct a tentative and hypothetical history of the writing of the

<sup>1</sup> See above, p. 8 *sq.* But compare also Appendix B.

<sup>2</sup> As has been already shown, p. 13 *sqq.*

Evangelium. St Molling of Ferns, in the latter half of the seventh century, wrote a copy of the four Gospels, in four gatherings of leaves, with a colophon in which this fact was stated. His exemplars were three in number,<sup>1</sup> including a mixed Vulgate text of St Mark, an Old Latin text of St Matthew and St Luke, and a copy of St John, written *per cola et commata*. The first and third Gospels were subsequently corrected from an imperfect Vulgate, or mixed copy. In the ninth century a transcript of Molling's Evangelium, thus corrected, and including the colophon, was made by a scribe of his monastery. This scribe possessed another mixed Vulgate Gospel manuscript, from which he took the numbers of sections and canons now found in the margin of the copy which he made. At the same time he adapted the text to them, made many corrections of the text, wrote an additional page which will be described hereafter,<sup>2</sup> and added a fifth "volumen" or gathering containing Jerome's prefaces and the Table of Canons, probably copied from the second manuscript just mentioned. The result was the Book of Mulling as we now have it.

Whether I have made it probable that this is a true history I must leave to others to decide. At least one thing is certain. We have succeeded in laying our hand on the adulteration of the text in its actual process. A copy made from the corrected text of our first fragment would have differed essentially from its archetype. The latter was Old Latin, the former would have been mainly Vulgate with Old Latin mixture. It is worth at least a sentence to remark, that such a text is formed, in this case at least, not by adulteration of the Vulgate with reminiscences of the older text, as we might have assumed to be the usual order of things,<sup>3</sup> but by the reverse process—by deliberately doctoring a pre-hieronymian text in order to bring it up to date. The text has in fact been constructed by exactly the same method as that which we have assumed to have given birth to that of the remainder of the Gospels of St Matthew and St Luke.

It may be well to add here a list of the readings of the corrector which differ from those of the Codex Amiatinus.

Matt. xxiv. 25. *om. vcrs.*

27. *apparet pro paret.*

46. *dominus eius.*

xxv. 2. *his pro eis.*

14. *om. peregre.*

29. *om. et sec.*

34. *om. eius.*

36. *carcere eram.*

37. *om. ei (?)*

39. [ . . ] *pro et pri.*

xxvi. 14. *dicitur pro dicebatur.*

26. *om. et comedite.*

28. *effundetur pro effunditur.*

Matt. xxvi. 36. *gezamani.*

39. *procedit pro procidit.*

42. *iterum hautem abiit pro iterum secundo abiit.*

48. *illum pro eum.*

*eis pro illis.*

56. *adinplerentur pro implerentur.*

58. *finem rei pro finem.*

59. *princeps pro principes.*

64. *cum pro in.*

67. *om. in pri.*

*om. ei.*

<sup>1</sup> See above, p. 41.

<sup>2</sup> Chapters vii. and viii.

<sup>3</sup> Compare Westcott and Hort's *New Testament*, ii. 81.

Matt. xxvi. 71. <i>om. autem.</i>	Matt. xxvii. 41. <i>includebant eum pro in-</i>
75. <i>fleuit amarissime pro</i>	<i>ludentes.</i>
<i>ploravit amare.</i>	43. <i>confidit pro confidet.</i>
xxvii. 1. <i>aduersum pro aduersus.</i>	<i>domino pro deo.</i>
3. <i>tradidit eum pro eum</i>	46. <i>hel. i. hel. i.</i>
<i>trad.</i>	49. <i>liberare pro liberans.</i>
<i>quia pro quod.</i>	Luke iv. 32. <i>eius pro ipsius.</i>
13. <i>aduersus pro aduersum.</i>	33. <i>sinagoga + eorum.</i>
19. <i>tibi sit pro tibi.</i>	34. <i>sis + tu es.</i>
<i>illum pro eum.</i>	Luke v. 15. <i>om. autem.</i>
20. <i>principes pro princeps.</i>	16. <i>deserto pro desertum.</i>
22. <i>faciemus pro faciam (?)</i>	31. <i>om. et.</i>
23. <i>om. dicentes.</i>	37. <i>ueteres uteres pro uteres</i>
24. <i>huius iusti pro iusti</i>	<i>uet.</i>
<i>huius.</i>	vi. 35. <i>disperantes pro inde</i>
35. <i>om. ut impleretur &amp;c.</i>	<i>sperantes.</i>
40. <i>distruit . . reedificat</i>	viii. 2. <i>e[x] pro de.</i>
<i>pro destruebat . .</i>	ix. 20. <i>ait pro dixit.</i>
<i>reedificabat.</i>	

### § 6. *Value of the Text.*

We must now attempt to estimate the value of our fragments as witnesses to the text of the Gospels in Ireland before the influence of the Vulgate translation began to be felt. A rough and ready test at once suggests itself. For the greater part of the Matthew fragment we are able to compare our text with two others,  $r_1$  and  $r_2$ . There are in fact about 540 places in which one or more of the three Old Latin manuscripts vary from the Codex Amiatinus, where the evidence of all three is available.<sup>1</sup> In about 140 of these  $\mu$   $r_1$   $r_2$  agree in supporting a reading different from the Amiatine. In 17 all three vary from it, but without supporting each other. In 11, two vary independently, the third supporting the Amiatine reading. In about 50 cases  $\mu$  alone differs from A, in 70 cases  $r_1$ , in 130  $r_2$ . Again in 65 readings  $\mu$  supports the Codex Amiatinus against the combined testimony of the other two,  $r_1$  does the same 25 times,  $r_2$  35 times. In all these latter cases we seem to have undoubted instances of Vulgate mixture in the several copies. Thus it will be seen that the Vulgate element in  $r_2$  is more marked than in  $r_1$ , while in  $\mu$  it is much greater than in either of these. On the other hand,  $r_2$ , as Mr Abbott remarks,<sup>2</sup> is full of blunders. The value of its singular readings is to a great extent discounted by this fact, and by it also their large number, as compared with those of  $r_1$  and  $\mu$ , is at least partially accounted for.

<sup>1</sup> The numbers given in this and the following paragraph are to be regarded as merely approximate, though I have taken pains to make them as accurate as possible. The general inference drawn from them is not likely, I believe, to be affected by any errors I may have made in the enumeration.

<sup>2</sup> *Evangeliorum Versio*, p. xvi.

On the whole, therefore,  $r_1$  must be held to contain the purest Old Latin text,  $\mu$  the most corrupted, while  $r_2$ —allowance being made for errors of the scribe—occupies a position midway between them.

In the Lucan fragment, the relation between  $\mu$  and  $r_1$  seems not to be quite the same as in St Matthew. In the former there are 1078 places in which one or other of the manuscripts varies from A. In 379 of these  $\mu$  and  $r_1$  agree, or, though not yielding exactly the same text, support one another in opposition to A; in 87 they vary from it independently. In 345 cases  $\mu$  alone varies from A, in 267 cases  $r_1$  alone. These figures point to the inference that  $\mu$  has here an older type of text than  $r_1$ . That the variation in character has taken place rather in  $\mu$  than in  $r_1$  appears from the fact that while the number of variants in both manuscripts is greater than might have been expected, judging from the number found in St Matthew, the increase in variation is even more marked in  $\mu$  than in  $r_1$ . The Lucan fragment is about half as long again as the Matthean, and the Codex Usserianus is here in a less fragmentary state. Now in St Matthew  $r_1$  yields 336 variants; we might therefore expect rather more than 500 in St Luke. We have in fact 733, or about 50 per cent more. In  $\mu$ , on the other hand, in St Matthew, there are nearly 275 variants, which warrants us in anticipating say 410 in St Luke. We actually find more than double the number—831. There is no evidence, so far as I have observed, to show that either  $r_1$  or  $\mu$  has suffered more from transcriptional errors in the third than in the first Gospel: we may thus pretty safely infer that the text of  $\mu$  is in St Luke more ancient than in St Matthew,—more ancient indeed than that of  $r_1$  in either Gospel, and less adulterated with Vulgate mixture.

## CHAPTER V.

## THE OLD LATIN PASSAGES.

THE purpose of the following line for line copy of the Old Latin portions of the Book of Mulling—St Matt. xxiv. 12–xxviii. 3; St Luke iv. 5–ix. 54—is to reproduce these passages of the manuscript as nearly as possible in the form in which they were originally written. Contractions are indeed expanded, but letters which had to be supplied are printed in italics. The manuscript has throughout been corrected by a hand closely resembling, or, as I rather think, identical with that of the original scribe. All alterations of the text made in the course of this correction are recorded in the lower margin. In some cases the original writing has become, in consequence of erasure or other causes, illegible: where this is so, the text is conjecturally restored, and the letters by which the hiatus is filled are enclosed in square brackets. If the conjecture is not obvious, a note is added at the end of the chapter stating the grounds on which it is based. It has been already remarked that the corrector divided the book into Ammonian sections, and that in order to force the text into agreement with this division, he sometimes erased the opening letters of the sections and re-wrote them in bolder character, sometimes contented himself with re-touching the first letter or two, so as to make them more prominent. In a few instances, in order to make room for the fresh writing, the scribe was obliged also to erase the closing words of the preceding section and re-write them in the margin or wherever space was available. In such cases as these the *prima facie* presumption clearly is that the original text was identical with that which we now have. I have therefore simply copied it without comment, bracketing those letters which in the original script have been so successfully erased as to be now illegible. The end of a section is always indicated by an asterisk (\*) and those places in which the sections of our manuscript do not coincide with those of *Codex Amiatinus* are mentioned in the notes.

I may add that the abbreviations  $\text{ih̄s} \text{ x̄ps} \text{ x̄pc}$  have not been expanded. Originally contractions of Greek words, they should be represented by Greek expansions if at all, but no doubt by our scribe they were regarded as merely conventional symbols. How he would have expanded the first it is impossible to say, for the word is not once (if we except *iessus*, Luk. iii. 29) written in full in the manuscript. The familiar symbol  $\text{h̄}$  I have ventured to expand *hautem*. The word is frequently so spelt in Irish MSS. (e.g. Book of Kells at St Luke, v. 6), and it seems not impossible that this spelling gave rise to the customary abbreviation.



S. MATT. XXIV. 12-20.

f. 45 v. b.

25 *tos et quoniam habundabit iniquitas et refri*  
*gerescet caritas multorum qui hancem perman*  
*serit usque in finem hic saluus erit .—\**  
 Et *predicabitur hoc euangelium regni* <sup>1</sup>*pertotum*<sup>1</sup>  
<sup>2</sup>*orbe[m]* *intestimonium omnibus gentibus*  
 30 *et tunc ueniet consummatio \* cum* <sup>3</sup>*hancem* *uideritis*  
*abominationem desolationis quæ dic*  
*taest per danielum profetam stantem in*  
*loco sancto qui legit intellegat \* tunc qui in iudea*  
*sunt fugiant in montes et qui in tecto sunt non*  
 35 *discendent tollere aliquid de domu*  
*sua et qui in agro erit non reuertatur tollere*  
*tonicam suam \* uæ hancem* <sup>4</sup>*pregnantibus et*  
*nutrientibus in illis diebus \* orate hancem*  
*ut non fiat fuga uestra hyeme uel sab*

<sup>1-1</sup> *Expuncted: above the line, in un-*  
*iuerso.*

<sup>2</sup> *The line over e (representing m) erased.*

<sup>3</sup> *Expuncted: in margin, ergo.*

<sup>4</sup> *Above the line (over e), i.*

S. MATT. XXIV. 20-34.

f. 46 r. a.

[bato \* erit eni]m tunc tribulatio magna  
 qualis non fuit ab initio <sup>1</sup>sæculi usque mo-  
 do neque fiet \* et nisi brēbiati fuissent  
 dies illi non fierit salua omnis caro  
 5 sed propter electos <sup>2</sup> brēbiabuntur[tur] dies  
 [illi \* tunc] si quis uobis dixerit ecce hic xps  
 aut illic nolite credere \* <sup>3</sup>[ex]urgent  
 enim seudoxpi et seudoprofetæ et dab-  
 unt signa magna et prodigia ita ut in er-  
 10 rorem inducant si fieri potest etiam  
<sup>4</sup>elect[os] \* <sup>5</sup> ecce prædixi uobis <sup>5</sup> si ergo dixerint  
 nobis ecce in deserto est nolite <sup>6</sup> credere  
 ecce in penetrabilibus nolite credere \*  
 sicut enim fulgor exiit ab oriente et <sup>7</sup>paret  
 15 usque <sup>8</sup>ad occidentem ita erit aduentus  
 filii hominis \* ubi] cumque fuerit corpus illic con-  
 gregabuntur aquilæ \* <sup>9</sup>[et] statim hautem post tri-  
 bulationem dierum eorum sol obscurabitur  
 et luna non dabit lumen suum et stelle  
 20 cadent de cælo et uirtutes <sup>10</sup>eorum com-  
 mouebuntur \* et tunc apparebit signum  
 filii hominis in cælo et tunc plangent <sup>11</sup>se omnes  
 tribus terræ et uidebunt filium hominis ue-  
 nientem in nubibus cæli cum uirtute m  
 25 ulta et maiestate et mittit angelos  
 suos cumtuba et uoce magna et congre-  
 gabunt electos eius a quattuor an-  
 gulis uentorum assummo cælorum usque  
 ad terminos eorum <sup>12</sup>cum coepererent hæc fieri  
 30 respicete et lenate caput quoniam  
 adpropeat redemptio uestra <sup>12</sup>ab  
 arbore hautem fici discite para-  
 bulam cum iam ramus eius tener fuerit  
 et folia nata cognoscetis  
 35 prope esse æstas sic  
 et uos cum uideritis hæc  
 omnia scitote quoniam  
 prope est ia nūis amen dico  
 uobis quia non præteribit hæc generatio

<sup>1</sup> Expuncted : above the line, mundi.<sup>2</sup> The letters enclosed in brackets erased.<sup>3</sup> ex erased : over the erasure S.<sup>4</sup> os erased : over the erasure V;<sup>5-6</sup> Expuncted.<sup>6</sup> Expuncted : in margin exire.<sup>7</sup> Above the line (over p) is added ap.<sup>8</sup> Expuncted : above the line in.<sup>9</sup> Erased.<sup>10</sup> Above the line c l; e changed into g; the word being thus altered to celorum.<sup>11</sup> Expuncted.<sup>12-12</sup> Expuncted, and a line drawn down left margin.

S. MATT. xxiv. 34-xxv. 3.

f. 46 r. b.

- donec omnia<sup>g</sup> fiant cælum et terra [t]ran  
sibunt uerba<sup>1</sup> haudem mea non<sup>2</sup> transibunt \*  
de die haudem illa et hora nemo scit neque  
angeli cælorum nisi pater solus \* sicut<sup>3</sup> enim in diebus  
5 noe ita erit et aduentus filii homi  
nis sicut enim erant in diebus ante diluuium  
manducabant et bibebant et nube  
bant et uxores ducebant usque in diem  
quo intrauit noe in arcam et non senserunt  
10 donec uenit diluuium et tulit omnes ita<sup>3e</sup> erit  
aduentus filii hominis \* tunc<sup>4</sup> erunt<sup>5</sup> duo in agro  
unus<sup>6</sup> adsumet[ur]<sup>7</sup> et [alte]r<sup>7</sup> relinquetur duæ<sup>8</sup>  
in mola<sup>9</sup> unus adsumetur et<sup>10</sup> un[us] relinquetur \*  
<sup>11</sup> uigilate ergo quia nescitis qua die uel qua  
15 hora dominus uester uenturus est \* illud haudem sci  
tote quoniam si sciret pater familias qua  
hora fūr uenisset uigilaret utique  
et non sineret perfudiri domum suam ideo  
et uos estote parati quia nescitis qua  
20 hora filius hominis uenturus est \*<sup>12</sup> fidelis seruus  
et prudens quem constituit dominus suus super  
familiam suam ut det illis cibum in tempore \*  
beatus ille seruus quem cum uenerit dñs<sup>12a</sup> in  
uenerit sic facientem amen dico uobis  
25 quoniam super omnia bona sua constituet eum \*  
si haudem dixerit malus ille seruus in corde  
suo moram facit dominus meus uenire et<sup>12b</sup> incip  
conseruos suos percutere manducit  
haudem et bibat cum ebriosis ueniet dominus ser  
30 ui illius in die qua non sperat et hora qua  
ignorat et diuidit cum partem que eius ponet  
cumin fidelibus illis erit fletus et stridor denti[um] \*  
Tunc simile erit regnum cælorum x uirginibus  
que<sup>13</sup> acciperunt lampades suas<sup>14</sup> et exierunt  
35<sup>15</sup> obiam sponso<sup>16</sup> quinque haudem ex<sup>17</sup> eis erant fa  
tue et quinque prudentes<sup>18</sup> fatue haudem  
acceptis lampadibus<sup>19</sup> suis

<sup>1</sup> Expuncted: above the line, uero.<sup>2</sup> Above the line, præteribunt.<sup>3</sup> Above the line, haudem.<sup>3e</sup> After this word is added et.<sup>4, 5</sup> Marked for transposition.<sup>6</sup> The mark indicating [ur] apparently erased and re-written.<sup>7, 7</sup> Erased: over erasure, et unus.<sup>8</sup> After duæ is added in margin mo | l-entes. <sup>9</sup> us erased: over erasure a.<sup>10</sup> us erased: over erasure a.<sup>11</sup> Altered into Uigilate.<sup>12</sup> Above the line, quis putas est.<sup>12a</sup> In margin is added eius.<sup>12b</sup> Some letters, apparently iet. are added in margin.<sup>13</sup> perunt expuncted: above the line, pientes.<sup>14</sup> erased. <sup>15</sup> Above the line (over b), u.<sup>16</sup> In lower margin is added, et sponsus.<sup>17</sup> e expuncted: over the line, h.<sup>18</sup> In margin is added, sed quinq[ue].<sup>19</sup> Expuncted.

S. MATT. XXV. 3-22.

f. 46 v. a.

- [*non sum*]pserunt oleum secum prudentes uero acci  
per[unt] oleum in uassīs suis *cum* lampadibus suis  
*moram hautem* faciente sponso dormita  
uerunt omnes *et* dormierunt media *hautem* nocte  
5 clamor factus est ecce sponsus uenit  
exite obiam ei *tunc* surrexerunt omnes illæ  
uirgines *et* acceperunt lampades suas  
fatuæ *hautem* sapientibus dixerunt date nobis  
deoleo uestro *quia* lampades nostræ exti  
10 nguntur responderunt prudentes *et*  
dixerunt *non* ne forte *non* sufficiat no  
bīs *et* uobīs ite putius ad eos qui uendu  
nt *et* emite nobis dum *hautem* irent emere  
uenit sponsus *et* quæ parate erant  
15 intrauerunt *cum* eo adnuptias *et* clusaest  
ianua postea uenerunt reliquæ uir  
gines dicentes domine domine aperi nobis  
at ille respondens ait amen dico uobis *quia*  
nescio uos uigilate itaque *quia* nescitis  
20 diem neque horam \* sicut enim homo <sup>1</sup> peregre pro  
ficiscens uocauit seruos suos *et* tra  
didit illis bona sua \* <sup>2</sup> *et* uni <sup>3</sup> quidem dedit  
quinque talenta alio *hautem* duo alio uero unum  
unicuique secundum propriam uirtutem  
25 *et* profectus est continuo *hautem* abīit qui quinque  
talenta acciperat *et* operatus est  
in eis *et* lucratus est alia quinque simi  
liter *hautem* *et* qui duo accipit lucratus est alia  
duo qui *hautem* unum acciperat <sup>4</sup> habens fo  
30 dit in terram *et* abscondit pecuniam domini  
sui post multum tempus uenit dominus illorum  
seruorum *et* possuit rationem cum eis  
accessit qui quinque <sup>5</sup> talenta acciperat *et*  
obtulit alia quinque dicens domine quinque talen  
35 ta tradidisti mihi ecce alia quinque superlu  
cratus sum at illi dominus suus euge ser  
ue bonæ *et* fidelis *quia* super pauca fide  
lis fuisti super multa tē constituam  
intra gaudium domini tui accessit *et* qui duo  
40 talenta acciperat similiter dixit domine  
duo talenta mihi tradidisti

<sup>1</sup> Expuncted.<sup>2</sup> Above the line, Et.<sup>3</sup> Expuncted.<sup>4</sup> Above the line (over b), i.<sup>5</sup> The last letter expuncted: above the line, a.

S. MATT. XXV. 22-37.

f. 46 v. b.

ecce alio duo superlucratum sum [ait illi dominus]  
 sum euge serue bone et fidelis quia super  
 pauca fidelis fuisti super multa te con-  
 stituam intra gaudium domini accedens hautem qui  
 5 unum talentum acciperat ait domine  
 scio quia homo durus es metis ubi non seminasti  
 et colligis ubi non sparsisti timui enim et  
 abi et abscondi talentum tuum in terra  
 ecce habes quod tuum est respondens hautem dominus  
 eius

10 dixit ei serue mala piger sciebas quia  
 metuo ubi non semino et colligo ubi non sp-  
 arsi oportuit ergo te dare pecuni-  
 am meam nummularis et ego ueniens  
 recipissem utique quod meum est cum ussura  
 15 tollite itaque ab eo talentum et date  
 ei qui habet .x. talenta \* [o]mni enim ha-  
 benti dabitur et habundabit ei hautem qui  
 non habet <sup>1</sup>etiam quod <sup>2</sup><sup>3</sup>habet auferetur \*  
<sup>4</sup>[ab eo et] seruum <sup>5</sup>nequam <sup>6</sup>proiecite <sup>7</sup>foras  
 20 intenebras exteriores illuc erit fle-  
 tus et stridor dentium., \* ff et omnes

Cum hautem uenerit filius hominis in maiestate sua  
 angeli cum eo tunc sedebit super sedem ma-  
 iestatis suae et congregabuntur ante  
 25 eum omnes gentes et seperabit <sup>8</sup>ab inuicem  
 quem ad modum separat pastor oves  
 ab haedis et statuit quidem oves ad  
 extris suis haedos hautem asinistris  
 tunc dicet rex his qui adextris <sup>9</sup>[eius]  
 30 <sup>10</sup>sunt uenite benedicti patris mei  
 percipite regnum quod uobis paratum  
 est ab initio mundi essuriui enim et  
 dedistis mihi manducare sitiui et  
 dedistis mihi bibere hospis  
 35 eram et colligistis me  
 nudus et operuistis me  
 infirmus et uisitastis me  
 in carcere <sup>11</sup>fui et uenistis ad me  
 tunc respondebunt <sup>12</sup>ei iusti dicentes domine quando te

<sup>1</sup> Expuncted.<sup>2</sup> Added in margin, uidetur.<sup>3</sup> The last letter expuncted and re sub-  
stituted (above the line).<sup>4</sup> Erased: in margins and over erasure,  
ab eo; | Et inutilem.<sup>5</sup> Expuncted.<sup>6</sup> pro erased.<sup>7</sup> Expuncted.<sup>8</sup> Above the line, eos.<sup>9</sup> Erased: over the erasure and project-  
ing into margin erunt.<sup>10</sup> Erased.<sup>11</sup> Above the line, eram.<sup>12</sup> Apparently expuncted.

S. MATT. XXV. 37—XXVI. 8.

f. 47 r. a.

- [uidim]us essurientem et pauimus <sup>1</sup> té aut siti  
 [entem] et potauimus té quando té uidimus  
 hospitem et suscipimus té aut nudum et co  
 operimus te <sup>2</sup> uel quando té uidimus infirm  
 5 um <sup>3</sup> et in carcere et uenimus ad te et res  
 pondit rex dicet illis amen dico nobis  
 quandiu fecistis uni ex fratribus  
 meis minimis mihi fecistis tunc dicet his  
 qui a sinistris eius erunt discidete amé  
 10 maledicti in ignem æternum quem præpa  
 rauit pater meus diabulo et angelis eius  
 esuriui enim et non dedistis mihi manduca  
 re sitiui et non dedistis mihi potum  
 hospis eram et non collegistis me  
 15 nudus eram et non operuistis me  
 infirmus et in carcere fui et non uisi  
 tastis me tunc respondebunt ei et ipsi dicen  
 tes domine quando te uidimus esurientem  
 aut sitientem aut hospitem aut nudum aut infir  
 20 mum uel in carcere et non ministravi  
 mus tibi tunc respondet eis dicens amen  
 dico uobis quandiu non fecistis uni  
 de minoribus his nec mihi fecistis tunc  
 ibunt isti in ignem æternum iusti autem in uitam eternam  
 25 Et factum est cum consummasset ih̄s <sup>4</sup> [omnia uerba  
 hæc] <sup>4</sup> dixit discipulis suis \* scitis quia post biduum  
 pascha fiet filius hominis tradetur utero  
 cifigatur \* tunc congregati sunt principes  
 sacerdotum et seniores populi in atri  
 30 um principis sacerdotum qui uocabatur  
 caifas et consilium fecerunt ut ih̄m dolo  
 tenerent et occiderent <sup>5</sup> dice[-]bant  
 autem non in die festo né forte tumultus  
 fieret in populo \* cum autem <sup>6</sup> ih̄s <sup>7</sup> esset  
 35 in bethania in domu simonis læpro  
 si accedens ad eum mulier habens al  
 abastrum ungenti pretiosi et infudit  
 super caput eius recumbente ipso  
 qui cum uidissent autem discipuli indignati sunt

<sup>1</sup> Expuncted (but see note).<sup>2</sup> Expuncted: in margin, aut.<sup>3</sup> Expuncted: apparently there is a marginal reading, indicated by the sign †, but if so it is illegible.<sup>4-4</sup> Erased: over the erasure and projecting into the margins, sermones hos omnes.<sup>5</sup> About two letters erased.<sup>6, 7</sup> Marked for transposition.

S. MATT. XXVI. 8-27.

f. 47 r. b.

- dicentes ut quid perditio hæc potuit  
enim uenundari pretioso mu  
lto et dari pauperibus sciens  
haudem ih̄s ait illis quid molesti estis mulieri  
5 bonum opus operata est in me nam semper pau  
peres habebistis uobiscum me haudem non semper  
habe<sup>1</sup>[bitis \* ecce enim mittens]<sup>1</sup> unguentum hoc in  
corpus meum ad sepeliendum me fecit amen  
dico uobis ut ubicumque predicatum fuerit hoc  
10 euangelium intoto mundo dicetur et quod hoc fecit  
in memoriam ipsius \* tunc abiit unus de duode  
cim qui <sup>2</sup>dic[e]batur iudas scarioth ad princi  
pes sacerdotum et ait illis quid uultis mihi  
dare et ego uobis eum tradam at illi consti  
15 tuerunt ei trigenta argenteos et exinde  
querebat oportunitatem ut eum traderet  
Pri ma haudem die <sup>3</sup>azimorum accesserunt discipuli ad  
ih̄m dicentes ubi uis paremus tibi <sup>4</sup>manducare  
pasca at ih̄s dixit ite in ciuitatem ad quen  
20 dam et dicite ei magister dicit tempus meum propeest  
apud te facio pascha cum discipulis meis et fe  
cerunt discipuli sicut precipit eis ih̄s et paruerunt  
pascha uespere haudem facto discumbebat  
cum duodecim discipulis \* <sup>5</sup>[et] <sup>6</sup>manducanti  
25 bus illis dixit amen dico uobis quia unus uestrum  
me <sup>7</sup>traditur \* et contristati sunt <sup>8</sup>nimis cepe  
runt siguli dicere numquid ego sum domine \* [at]  
ipse respondens <sup>9</sup>dixit qui intinguit mecum manum  
in parabside hic me <sup>3</sup>tradit <sup>10</sup>et filius  
30 quidem hominis <sup>11</sup>tradetur sicut scriptum est <sup>12</sup>\*  
uae haudem homini illi per quem filius hominis tra  
detur bonum erat <sup>13</sup>[non nasci homini illi \* respondens] <sup>13</sup>  
haudem iudas qui <sup>14</sup>traditu[rus] eum <sup>15</sup>[erat di]xit <sup>15</sup>num  
quid ego sum rabbi ait illi <sup>10</sup>ih̄s tu dixisti \*  
35 <sup>16</sup>i[ps]is haudem manducantibus] <sup>16</sup><sup>3</sup> accipit ih̄s  
panem <sup>17</sup>benedixit <sup>18</sup>et fregit et dedit <sup>19</sup>disci  
pulis suis <sup>20</sup>dicens accipite <sup>10</sup>et <sup>10</sup>mandu  
cate hoc est enim corpus meum \* et accipiens  
calicem gratias egit et dedit illis dicens

<sup>1-1</sup> Erased: over erasure, tis: . Mittens  
enim hoc, followed by space.

<sup>2</sup> e transformed by erasure into i; ba  
expuncted. The word is thus chan  
ged to dicitur. <sup>3</sup> i changed into e.

<sup>4</sup> Expuncted: above the line, comedere.

<sup>5</sup> Erased: above the line, Et.

<sup>6</sup> Above the line, edentibus.

<sup>7</sup> Above line, end of word us (see note).

<sup>8</sup> Above the line, nalde.

<sup>9</sup> Above the line, ait. <sup>10</sup> Expuncted.

<sup>11</sup> Expuncted: above the line, uadit.

<sup>12</sup> Added in margin, de illo.

<sup>13</sup> Erased: over erasure ei si natus non  
fuisset homo ille, and in left margin  
opposite line 33, Respondens.

<sup>14</sup> tu changed into di: rus erased, and  
over the erasure t, the word being  
thus altered to tradidit.

<sup>15-15</sup> Erased: over the erasure, dixit.

<sup>16-16</sup> Erased: over the erasure, Cenanti  
bus haudem eis, followed by space.

<sup>17</sup> Above the line, et. <sup>18</sup> Above line, ac.

<sup>19</sup> Above the line is added, que.

<sup>20</sup> Expuncted: above the line, et ait.

S. MATT. XXVI. 27-44.

f. 47 v. a.

- bibete ex hoc omnes hic *est enim* san-  
 guis meus novi testamen-  
 ti qui pro multis <sup>1</sup> effunditur in re-  
 missione peccatorum dico ha<sup>2</sup>tem vobis  
 5 <sup>2</sup> [quia] non bibam amodo de hoc genimine vitis us-  
 que in diem illum cum illud bibam vobiscum novum  
 in regno patris mei \* [et] ymno dicto exi-  
 erunt in montem oliueti, \* ff ni in me inista  
 Tunc dicit illis ih̄s omnes vos scandalum patiemini  
 10 nocte \* scribitur est enim perentiam pastorem  
 et dispergentur oves gregis <sup>3</sup> resurrexero  
 praecedam vos in <sup>4</sup> galieam \* respondens ha<sup>2</sup>tem petrus  
 dixit si omnes scandalizabuntur in te ego  
 enim numquam scandalizabor dicit illi ih̄s am-  
 15 en dico tibi quoniam hac nocte antequam gallus  
 cantet ter me negabis \* <sup>5</sup> dicit illi petrus <sup>6</sup> si  
 oportuerit me mori tecum non te ne-  
 gabo similiter et omnes discipuli dixerunt \* tunc ve-  
 nit <sup>7</sup> cum illis <sup>7</sup> <sup>8</sup> ih̄s in <sup>9</sup> agrum qui <sup>9</sup> dicitur <sup>10</sup> gedzamani \*  
 20 <sup>11</sup> [et] dixit discipulis suis sedete hic donec uadam  
 illuc et <sup>12</sup> horem et adsumpto petro et du-  
 obus filiis zebedei cepit contristari  
 et mestus esse \* tunc <sup>13</sup> dicit illis <sup>14</sup> ih̄s tristis est ani-  
 ma mea usque ad mortem sustinete hic  
 25 et uigilate mecum \* et progressus pussillum <sup>15</sup>  
<sup>16</sup> cecidit in faciem suam orans et dicens pater  
 si possibile est transeat a me calix  
<sup>17</sup> [iste \* sed] <sup>17</sup> tamen non <sup>18</sup> quod ego uolo sed <sup>18</sup> quod tu uis \* [et]  
 uenit ad discipulos suos et inuenit eos dormi-  
 30 entes et dixit petro sic non potuistis unam  
 horam uigilare mecum uigilate et orate  
 ut non intretis in temptationem \* spiritus quidem  
 prumtus est caro ha<sup>2</sup>tem in firma \* <sup>19</sup> [abiit] ha<sup>2</sup>tem  
<sup>20</sup> [iterum] et orauit dicens pater mi non potest  
 35 calix transire a me nisi bibam illum  
 fiat uoluntas uenit iterum et inuenit eos  
 dormientes erant enim oculi eorum grauati  
 et relinquens eos iterum abiit et orauit

<sup>1</sup> i altered into e.      <sup>2</sup> erased?<sup>3</sup> In marg. is added, postquam ha<sup>2</sup>tem.<sup>4</sup> Above the line (over e), l.<sup>5</sup> Expuncted: above the line, ait.<sup>6</sup> In margin is added, etiam.<sup>7-7,8</sup> Marked for transposition.<sup>9-9</sup> Above line uillam quae.<sup>10</sup> d expuncted.<sup>11</sup> Erased: over erasure Et. <sup>12</sup> h erased.<sup>13</sup> Above the line, ait.<sup>14</sup> Expuncted.<sup>15</sup> In margin, pro.<sup>16</sup> ci erased.<sup>17-17</sup> Erased: over erasure, Uerum, fol-  
lowed by space. iste is re-written  
in margin after calix.<sup>18</sup> Expuncted: above the line, sicut (his).<sup>19</sup> Erased: over erasure, Iterum.<sup>20</sup> Erased: over erasure abiit, followed  
by space.



S. MATT. xxvi. 44-58.

f. 47 v. b.

- tertio eundem sermonem \* [tunc uenit ad discipulos]  
 suos *et dixit* <sup>1</sup> eis dormite iam *et requiescite*  
 ecce adpropinquauit hora *et filius hominis*  
*tradetur in manus peccatorum surgite*  
 5 *eamus* ecce adpropinquauit qui me tradet \*  
*adhuc ipso loquente* ecce iudas unus  
*ex duodecim uenit et cumeo* plurima mul-  
*titudo cum gladiis et fustibus misi apri-  
 pibus sacerdotum et senioribus populi \**  
 10 qui *hautem* tradidit <sup>2</sup> eum dedit <sup>3</sup> illis signum *dicens*  
*quem* <sup>4</sup> osculatus fuero ipse *est* tenete  
*eum et confestim* accedens ad ihm *dixit* <sup>5</sup> [h]aué  
*rabbi et osculatus est eum* <sup>6</sup> cui *dixit* <sup>7</sup> ihs am-  
*ice ad quod uenisti fac tunc accesserunt*  
 15 *et manus iniecerunt in ihm et tenuerunt eum \**  
*et ecce unus ex his qui erant cum ihm* exten-  
*dit manum et exemit gladium suum et per-*  
*cussit seruum principis sacerdotum*  
*et amputauit auriculam eius \** tunc ait illi  
 20 ihs *conuerte gladium tuum in locum suum omnes*  
*enim qui* <sup>8</sup> accipiunt gladium in gladio peri-  
*bunt an putas quia non possum modo*  
*rogare patrem meum et exhibet mihi modo*  
*plusquam xii milia legiones angelorum*  
 25 *quomodo ergo implebuntur scribatur quia*  
*sic oportet fieri \** in illa hora *dixit* ihs  
<sup>9</sup> ad <sup>10</sup> turbas *quasi ad latronem uenistis cum*  
*gladiis et fustibus conprehendere me*  
*cotidie apud uos sedebam in templo*  
 30 *docens et non me tenuistis \** hoc *hautem* totum fac-  
*tum est ut* <sup>11</sup> impleretur scribaturæ profetarum  
*tunc discipuli* <sup>12</sup> [eius] omnes relicto eo fugierunt \*  
<sup>13</sup> illi <sup>14</sup> [hautem] tenentes ihm *perduxerunt ad caifan*  
*principem sacerdotum ubi scribae et*  
 35 *seniores* <sup>15</sup> conuenerunt \* petrus *hautem* sequebatur  
*eum alongue usque in atrium principis sa-*  
*cerdotum et ingresus* <sup>16</sup> intus in <sup>17</sup> atrio

<sup>1</sup> Above the line, illis.<sup>2</sup> Above the line, illum.<sup>3</sup> Above the line, eis.<sup>4</sup> Above the line, cumque.<sup>5</sup> h erased.<sup>6</sup> Expuncted.<sup>7</sup> Added in margin, que illi.<sup>8</sup> Altered into acciper int by crasure.<sup>9</sup> Expuncted.<sup>10</sup> Above the line (over a), i.<sup>11</sup> Above the line, ad, and (over et)n., theword being thus changed to adim-  
plerentur.<sup>12</sup> Erased.<sup>13</sup> In margin, At.<sup>14</sup> Erased.<sup>15</sup> Above the line (over last syllable) a;  
the word being apparently intended  
to be read conuenerant.<sup>16</sup> us expuncted: above the line, tro.<sup>17</sup> Expuncted.

S. MATT. xxvi. 58-71.

f. 48 r. a.

- [sede]bat *cum* ministris utuideret <sup>1</sup> exitum  
<sup>2</sup> [rei \* pri]ncip[e]s <sup>2</sup> <sup>3</sup> sacerdotum et <sup>4</sup> uniuersum  
*concilium* querebant falsum testi  
monium <sup>5</sup> aduersus ihm̄ ut eum morti tra  
<sup>5</sup> derent et non inuenerunt <sup>6</sup> in <sup>6</sup> eo <sup>6</sup> quicquam cum multi  
falsi testes accessissent \* nouissimæ  
*haudem* uenerunt duo falsi testes et dixerunt  
audiuimus hunc dixisse possum  
distruere templum hoc dei et post tridu  
<sup>10</sup> um ædificare illud et surgens  
princeps sacerdotum ait illi nihil  
respondes ad ea quæ isti testifican  
tur aduersus tē ih̄s *haudem* tacebat et res  
pondens princeps sacerdotum dixit  
<sup>15</sup> illi adiuro tē p<sup>r</sup> deum uiuum ut di  
cas nobis si tū es xp̄c filius dei  
et dicit illi ih̄s tū dixisti \* uerum tamen dico  
uobis amodo uidebitis filium ho  
minis sedentem <sup>7</sup> ad <sup>8</sup> dexteram uir  
<sup>20</sup> tutis et uenientem <sup>9</sup> in nubibus cæli \*  
tunc princeps sacerdotum scidit nesti  
menta sua dicens <sup>10</sup> blasfemat quid <sup>13</sup> nunc  
adhuc <sup>11</sup> opus est testibus \* ecce nunc au  
distis blasfemeam quid uobis uidetur  
<sup>25</sup> at illi <sup>12</sup> responderunt <sup>6</sup> omnes <sup>6</sup> et dixerunt reus est  
mortis \* tunc expuerunt <sup>13</sup> in faciem eius et co  
laphis eum cæderunt <sup>14</sup> alii *haudem* palmas  
in faciem <sup>16</sup> eius dederunt dicentes prophe  
tiza nobis xp̄c quis est qui tē <sup>15</sup> percussit \*  
<sup>30</sup> petrus <sup>16</sup> [haudem] sedebat foris in atrio  
et accessit ad eum una <sup>6</sup> ex <sup>17</sup> ancillis  
<sup>18</sup> dixit <sup>6</sup> illi et tū cum ih̄u galileo eras at  
ille negauit coram omnibus dicens  
nescio quid dicis <sup>6</sup> neque <sup>6</sup> intellego\* [ex]  
<sup>35</sup> eunte <sup>6</sup> *haudem* illo ianuam uidit eum alia  
<sup>6</sup> anc ella et ait <sup>19</sup> illis qui erant ibi

<sup>1</sup> Above the line, finem.<sup>2-2</sup> The letters enclosed in brackets erased:  
in right margin, after l. 1, rei;  
and over erasure, followed by space,  
Pri: the second i of principes is  
transformed into e and e erased, the  
word being thus changed to prin-  
ceps.<sup>3</sup> Above the line is inserted haudem.<sup>4</sup> Above the line, omne.<sup>5</sup> Above the line, contra. <sup>6</sup> Erpuncted.<sup>7</sup> d erased.<sup>8</sup> am erased: over erasure, is.<sup>9</sup> Erpuncted: above the line, cum.<sup>10</sup> Above the line, before t, ni.<sup>11</sup> Above the line, egemus.<sup>12</sup> In margin (indicated as following n),  
tes: the intention being that the  
ambiguous respon̄ should be read as  
a present participle respondentes.<sup>13</sup> Erased.<sup>14</sup> i added at end.<sup>15</sup> The second e expuncted, and above it, i.<sup>16</sup> Changed, partly by erasure, to uero.<sup>17</sup> is changed, partly by erasure, to a.<sup>18</sup> x transformed by partial erasure,  
into c: s added above the line: the  
word being thus altered to dicens.<sup>19</sup> Erpuncted: under the line, his.

S. MATT. xxvi. 71-xxvii. 10.

f. 48 r. b.

et hic erat *eum* ihū nazareno <sup>1</sup> iterum nega  
 nit *eum* iuramento <sup>2</sup> dixit quia non noui hominem  
 et post pussillum accesserunt qui stabant et  
 dixerunt petro uere tū ex illis es nam  
 5 et loquella tua manifestum tē facit  
 tunc cæpit detestare et iurare quia non nos  
 set hominem et <sup>3</sup> statim gallus cantauit \*  
<sup>4</sup> et recordatus est petrus uerbi ihū quod  
 dixerat prius quam gallus cantet ter  
 10 mē negabis egressus foras <sup>5</sup> ama  
 rissime <sup>6</sup> fleuit \* mane *hautem* <sup>7</sup> [eum] <sup>8</sup> factum <sup>7</sup> [esse]t  
 consilium <sup>9</sup> [fe]cerunt omnes principes sacer  
 dotum et seniores <sup>10</sup> plebis <sup>11</sup> aduersus ihū  
 ut eum morti traderent et uinctum <sup>5</sup> eum  
 15 <sup>6</sup> adduxerunt \* et tradiderunt pontio py  
 lato præssidi \* tunc <sup>12</sup> uedens iudas qui <sup>5</sup> eum  
<sup>6</sup> tradidit <sup>13</sup> quonia[m] damnatus est penitentia  
 ductus retulit trigenta argenteos  
 principibus sacerdotum et senioribus  
 20 dicens peccaui <sup>7</sup> quod <sup>14</sup> tradider[im] sangui  
 nem iustum at illi dixerunt quid ad nōs  
 tū uideris et proiectis argenteis in  
 templo <sup>15</sup> processit et <sup>16</sup> laqueo <sup>5</sup> suspendit <sup>6</sup> se  
<sup>2</sup> tunc principes <sup>17</sup> sacerdotum acceperunt ar  
 25 genteis dixerunt non licet eos mittere in  
 curbān <sup>2</sup> hoc <sup>2</sup> est <sup>2</sup> in <sup>2</sup> oblationem quia prætium san  
 guinis est consilio *hautem* <sup>18</sup> facto <sup>2</sup> intersē emerunt  
 ex illis <sup>2</sup> *hautem* agrum figuli in sepulturam per  
 30 igrinorum propter hoc cognominatus est ager  
 ille acheldemath quod est ager sangui  
 nis usque in hodiernum diem tunc <sup>19</sup> [ad]inpletum  
 est quod dictum est per heremiam profetam dicen  
 tem et acceperunt trigenta argenteos  
 prætium adprætiati <sup>20</sup> quod adprætiauērunt <sup>21</sup> filiis  
 35 israhel et dederunt eos in agrum figuli sicut constituit  
 mihi dominus . . , \*

<sup>1</sup> Above the line, et.<sup>2</sup> Expuncted.<sup>3</sup> Expuncted: above the line, continuo.<sup>4</sup> Altered into Et.<sup>5-6</sup> Marked for inversion.<sup>7</sup> Erased.<sup>8</sup> The line representing m erased; u altered into o.<sup>9</sup> fec erased: over the erasure, ini.<sup>10</sup> Above the line, populi.<sup>11</sup> A line drawn over second u, and s expuncted: the word being thus changed to aduersum.<sup>12</sup> The first e changed into i.<sup>13</sup> m and the mark of abbreviation erased, and the remainder altered into quia.<sup>14</sup> di erased, rī altered to us, the word thus becoming tradens.<sup>15</sup> pro expuncted: above the line, re.<sup>16</sup> Above the line, abiens.<sup>17</sup> Above the line, hautem.<sup>18</sup> Expuncted: above the line, inito.<sup>19</sup> ad erased.<sup>20</sup> Expuncted, above the line, quem.<sup>21</sup> Above the line, u.

S. MATT. xxvii. 11-26.

f. 48 v. a.

[ih]s *hautem* stetit ante *presidem et interrogauit*  
 eum <sup>1</sup> *presis dicens* tū es rex iudeorum *dicit ei*  
 ih̄s tū dicis \* *et cum accusaretur a* principi  
 bus sacerdotum *et senioribus nihil resp*  
 5 *ondebat tunc dicit* <sup>2</sup> ei pylatus *non audis*  
 quanta <sup>3</sup> *aduersum te* <sup>4</sup> *testificantur et non*  
<sup>5</sup> *respondit ei* <sup>6</sup> *ullum uerbum ita ut mira*  
*retur* <sup>7</sup> *presis* <sup>8</sup> *multum* \* *per diem* <sup>9</sup> *sollemnem* <sup>10</sup> *consu*  
*etudo erat* <sup>10</sup> <sup>11</sup> *presis* *dimittere populo*  
 10 *unum uinctum quem uoluissent* \* *habebant hautem*  
*tunc* <sup>12</sup> *uinctum insignem qui dicebatur barabas*  
*congregatis illis dixit pylatus quem uultis*  
*uobis dimittam barabā an ih̄m qui*  
*dicitur x̄ps sciebat enim quod per inuidiam tra*  
 15 *diderunt eum* \* *sedente hautem illo protribunali*  
*missit ad* <sup>13</sup> *cum uxor eius dicens nihil* <sup>14</sup> *sit* <sup>15</sup> *tibi*  
*et iusto illi multa* <sup>16</sup> *passa sum hodie*  
*per uisum propter* <sup>17</sup> *eum* \* <sup>18</sup> *princeps hautem sacerdotum*  
*et seniores persuaserunt populo utpe*  
 20 *terent barabā ih̄m hautem perdirent*  
*respondens hautem presis ait illis quem uultis de*  
*duobus dimittam uobis at illi dixerunt ba*  
*rabā* \* *dicit illis pilatus* <sup>19</sup> *qui ergo* <sup>19</sup> <sup>20</sup> *faci[am de]* <sup>20</sup>  
*ih̄m qui dicitur x̄ps dicunt omnes crucifigatur*  
 25 *ait* <sup>21</sup> *pilatus quid enim mali fecit at illi*  
*magis clamabant* <sup>22</sup> *dicentes cruci*  
*figatur* \* *uidens hautem pylatus quia* <sup>23</sup> *ni[c]hil* <sup>24</sup> *pro*  
*ficit sed magis tumultus* <sup>25</sup> *fierit in* <sup>26</sup> *po*  
*pulo accepta aqua* <sup>27</sup> *lauauit manus*  
 30 <sup>28</sup> *suas dicens* <sup>28</sup> *coram populo* <sup>29</sup> *innocens ego*  
*sum a sanguine huius* <sup>30</sup> *uos uideritis*  
*et respondens uniuersus populus dixit sa*  
*nguis* <sup>31</sup> *huius super nos et super filios nos*  
*tros* \* *tunc dimisit illis barabā*  
 35 *ih̄m hautem flagellatum tradidit eis*

<sup>1</sup> i altered into e. <sup>2</sup> Above the line, illi.<sup>3</sup> Above the line, over the final letter, s.<sup>4</sup> Above the line, dicant testimonia.<sup>5</sup> Above the line, at end of word, dit.<sup>6</sup> Below the line, ad. <sup>7</sup> i altered to e.<sup>8</sup> In margin, uel uelimentem.<sup>9</sup> Above the line, hautem.<sup>10-10</sup> Expuncted: above the line, con-  
suerat.<sup>11</sup> i changed into e.<sup>12</sup> Above the line (over n), e.<sup>13</sup> Expuncted: above the line, illum.<sup>14, 15</sup> Marked for transposition.<sup>16</sup> Above line, enim. <sup>17</sup> Above line, illum.<sup>18</sup> Above the line (after ep), e.<sup>19-19</sup> Altered into quid igitur (see note).<sup>20-20</sup> am de erased: over erasure and in  
margin at beginning of next line,  
emus | de (see note).<sup>21</sup> Above the line, illis prases.<sup>22</sup> Expuncted. <sup>23</sup> c erased (see note).<sup>24</sup> Above the line (over final syllable), er.<sup>25</sup> The second i altered into e.<sup>26</sup> Expuncted. <sup>27</sup> na expuncted.<sup>28-28</sup> Expuncted. <sup>29</sup> Above line, dicens.<sup>30</sup> Above the line, iusti.<sup>31</sup> Expuncted: above the line, eius.

S. MATT. xxvii. 26-40.

f. 48 v. b.

ut <sup>1</sup> eum <sup>2</sup> crucifigeret \* tunc milites præs[idis]  
<sup>3</sup> duxerunt ihm̄ in prætōrium <sup>4</sup> et congregauerunt  
 ad eum uniuersam cohortem <sup>5</sup> et uestier[unt]  
 eum tunicam porpuream <sup>5</sup> et <sup>6</sup> calamidem  
<sup>5</sup> cocciniam circumdederunt ei <sup>7</sup> plectentes  
 coronam despinis possuerunt super  
 capud eius et arundinem in dexteram eius  
 et genu flexu ante eum <sup>8</sup> adorabant  
 dicentes áué réx iudeorum \* <sup>9</sup> [et expuerunt  
<sup>10</sup> in faciem] eius <sup>9</sup> <sup>10</sup> [et] acciperunt arundinem  
 et percutiebant capud eius et postquam in  
 luserunt ei exuerunt eum calamidem coc  
 ciniam induerunt eum uestimentis eius  
 duxerunt eum ut crucifigerent <sup>11</sup> eum \*  
<sup>15</sup> exeuntes hautem inuenerunt hominem <sup>12</sup> ciri  
 nensem <sup>13</sup> uenientem obiam illi <sup>13</sup> nomine  
 simonem hunc angarizauerunt <sup>14</sup>  
<sup>15</sup> tollere crucem eius \* et uenerunt in locum qui  
 dicitur golgotha quod est caluarię locus \*  
<sup>20</sup> <sup>16</sup> et dederunt ei uinum bibere cum felle  
 mixtum et cum gustasset noluit bibe  
 re \* postquam <sup>17</sup> crucifixerunt eum di  
 uiserunt uestimenta eius sortem mit  
 tentes <sup>18</sup> utimpleretur quod dictum est per pro  
<sup>25</sup> fetam diuiserunt sibi uestimenta  
 mea et super uestem meam miserunt  
 sortem <sup>18</sup> et sedentes <sup>19</sup> [ob]seruaba  
 nt eum \* et <sup>20</sup> possuerunt super capud eius  
 causam <sup>21</sup> illius <sup>22</sup> inscriptam hic est <sup>23</sup> rex  
<sup>30</sup> iudeorum \* tunc <sup>24</sup> crucifix[e]runt eum eo <sup>25</sup> duos  
 latrones <sup>26</sup> unu[m] adextris et <sup>27</sup> [alter]u[m]  
 asinistris \* <sup>28</sup> tunc euntes <sup>28</sup> blasphema  
 bant eum mouentes capita sua et  
 dicentes ua qui <sup>29</sup> destruebas templum  
<sup>35</sup> dei et in triduo illud <sup>30</sup> reædi ficabas

<sup>1</sup> Expuncted. <sup>2</sup> Final lett. altered to tur.<sup>3</sup> Expuncted: above the line, suscipientes.<sup>4</sup> Expuncted. <sup>5,5</sup> Expuncted.<sup>6</sup> Above line, exuentes. <sup>7</sup> Above line, et.<sup>8</sup> Expuncted: above the line, inludabant.<sup>9-9</sup> Erased: over erasure, and extending into right margin, Et expuen | tes in eum, followed by space.<sup>10</sup> Erased. <sup>11</sup> Erased.<sup>12</sup> nensem expuncted: the second i changed into e; in right margin, neuu: the word being thus altered to cireneu.<sup>13-13</sup> Expuncted. <sup>14</sup> Added in marg., ut.<sup>15</sup> Added at end, t. <sup>16</sup> Changed into Et.<sup>17</sup> Above the line, hautem.<sup>18-18</sup> Expuncted, and a line drawn down left margin.<sup>19</sup> ob erased. <sup>20</sup> Above the line, in.<sup>21</sup> Expuncted: above the line, ipsius.<sup>22</sup> in erased. <sup>23</sup> Above the line, ihs.<sup>24</sup> Altered to crucifixi sunt.<sup>25</sup> Last letter erased.<sup>26</sup> Horizontal line (indicating m) erased, under the line, s.<sup>27</sup> alter and line over u erased, nuu added in margin.<sup>28-28</sup> Expuncted: over the line, prater euntes hautem.<sup>29</sup> ebas expuncted: over the line, it.<sup>30</sup> bas expuncted: over the line, it.

S. MATT. XXVII. 40-54.

f. 49 r. a.

[saluu]m fac temet ipsum. si filius dei es  
 [di]scende de cruce \* similiter et princi  
 [pe]s sacerdotum <sup>1</sup> inludentes cum scribis  
 et senioribus <sup>2</sup> et dicebant <sup>2</sup> alios saluos  
<sup>5</sup> fecit se ipsum non potest saluum facere  
 si rex israhel <sup>3</sup> es <sup>4</sup> descend[e] nunc de cruce  
 et credemus ei <sup>5</sup> confidat in <sup>6</sup> domin[um] <sup>7</sup> iam li  
 beret <sup>8</sup> eum si uult <sup>9</sup> [eum \* dixit] <sup>9</sup> enim quia <sup>16</sup> filius <sup>17</sup> dei  
 sum id ipsum hautem et latrones qui crucifixi  
<sup>10</sup> erant cum eo inproperabant ei, \*  
<sup>10</sup> A b ora hautem <sup>10</sup> sexta <sup>11</sup> tenebre factae sunt  
 super universam terram usque ad horam  
<sup>11a</sup> [nonam] \* circa <sup>7</sup> [hautem] horam <sup>12</sup> clamauit  
 ih̄s uoce magna dicens <sup>13</sup> heli heli <sup>13</sup> <sup>14</sup> la  
<sup>15</sup> mazabathan. i. hoc est <sup>7</sup> [deus] deus meus <sup>15</sup>  
 ut quid <sup>16</sup> me <sup>17</sup> dereliquisti. quidam hautem illi  
 stantes et audientes dicebant he  
 liam uocat iste \* et continuo curr  
 ens unus ex eis acceptam <sup>18</sup> spungiam  
<sup>20</sup> implebit aceto et inpossuit <sup>19</sup> arum  
 dinem et dabat ei bibere \* [c]æteri uero  
 dicebant <sup>20</sup> sine[te] <sup>21</sup> uidiamus <sup>22</sup> si <sup>23</sup> uenit  
 helias <sup>24</sup> et saluet <sup>24</sup> eum <sup>25</sup> alius hautem accipit  
 lanciam et pupunguit latus eius et exit  
<sup>25</sup> aqua et sanguis <sup>25</sup> ih̄s hautem iterum <sup>26</sup> excla  
 mauit uoce magna <sup>7</sup> [et] emisit spiritum \*  
 et ecce uelum templi scissum est in duas  
 partes a summo usque <sup>27</sup> ad deorsum \*  
<sup>28</sup> [et] <sup>29</sup> terrae <sup>30</sup> mot[us] <sup>27</sup> factus <sup>27</sup> est <sup>27</sup> magnus et petre  
<sup>30</sup> scissae sunt et monumenta aperta sunt  
 et <sup>31</sup> corpora sanctorum <sup>32</sup> domientium sur  
 rexerunt et exeuntes demonumentis  
 post resurrectionem <sup>33</sup> ipsius uenerunt  
 in sanctam ciuitatem et <sup>16</sup> multis <sup>17</sup> appa  
<sup>35</sup> ruerunt \* <sup>34</sup> [c]enturio hautem et qui cum eo erant

<sup>1</sup> ntes expuncted: above line, bant eum.<sup>2-2</sup> Expuncted: above the line, dicentes.<sup>3</sup> t added at end of word.<sup>4</sup> Final letter erased: over erasure, at.<sup>5</sup> a expuncted, i above it.<sup>6</sup> Final letter of dñm erased: over erasure, o, followed by slight space.<sup>7</sup> Erased. <sup>8</sup> Above the line, nunc.<sup>9-9</sup> Erased: over the crasure, DIXIT, followed by space.<sup>10-10</sup> Exp., save A.<sup>11</sup> Above line, hautem hora.<sup>11a</sup> nonam erased: over cras. Et, followed by space: nonam re-written in marg. opposite l. 12.<sup>12</sup> Above the line, nonam.<sup>13-13</sup> Points are inserted before and after i in each of these words, and in the margin is written hel. i. hel. i.<sup>14</sup> Above the line (after ba), c.<sup>15</sup> Added in margin, deus meus.<sup>16, 17</sup> Marked for transposition.<sup>18</sup> u altered to o, i to e. <sup>19</sup> em altered to i.<sup>20</sup> te erased. <sup>21</sup> Second i altered to e.<sup>22</sup> Expuncted: above the line, an.<sup>23</sup> Above line (after i), a.<sup>24-24</sup> Expuncted: above the line, liberare.<sup>25-25</sup> Expuncted, and a line drawn down left margin.<sup>26</sup> ex erased, ui altered to us, t erased.<sup>27</sup> Expuncted. <sup>28</sup> Erased: over cras. Et.<sup>29</sup> Altered by erasure to terra.<sup>30</sup> us erased: over cras. a; above line, est.<sup>31</sup> Above the line, multa.<sup>32</sup> Expuncted: above the line, qui dormierant.<sup>33</sup> Expuncted: above the line, eius.<sup>34</sup> Above the line (over first o), u.

S. MART. xxvii. 54-66.

f. 49 r. b.

custodientes ih̄m <sup>1</sup> *cum* uidissent terræ  
 motum *et* ea <sup>1</sup> *que* fiebant *timuerunt* ualde  
 dicentes uere dei filius erat iste \* erant  
 ha<sup>1</sup>tem ibi mulieres multæ á longe uiden  
 5 tes *que* secute <sup>2</sup> fuerant ih̄m agalilia  
 ministrantes <sup>3</sup> illi *inter* quás erat maria  
 magdalenæ *et* maria iacobi *et* ioseph  
*et* mater filiorum zebedei \* <sup>4</sup> [*cum* sero ha<sup>1</sup>tem esset] <sup>4</sup>  
 factum <sup>5</sup> uenit quidam homo diues ab ari  
 10 mathea nomine ioseph *qui* *et* ipse  
 discipulus erat ih̄u hic <sup>6</sup> accesset  
 ad pilatum *et* petit corpus ih̄u \* [*tunc* py]  
 latus iussit dari corpus <sup>7</sup> ih̄u *et* cum <sup>7</sup>  
<sup>8</sup> accipisset ioseph <sup>9</sup> corpus ih̄u <sup>9</sup> inuol  
 15 uit illud in sindone munda *et* possuit  
 illud in monumento suo nouo *quod* exci  
 derat in petra *et* aduoluit saxum  
 magnum ad <sup>10</sup> hostium monumenti *et* <sup>11</sup> dis  
 cesset \* erat ha<sup>1</sup>tem ibi maria \* magda  
 20 lena *et* altera maria sedentes *contra* sepulchrum \*  
 A ltera ha<sup>1</sup>tem die *que* est post parascen con  
 uenerunt principes sacerdotum *et* pha  
 risei ad pylatum dicentes domine reme  
 morati sumus *quod* seductor ille dixit  
 25 adhuc uiuens post tres dies resurgam  
 iubē ergo custodiri sepulchrum usque in  
 diem tertium ne forte ueniant discipuli  
 eius *et* furentur eum *et* dicant plebi sur  
 rexit amouit *et* erit nouissimus  
 30 error peior <sup>12</sup> priori ait illis pyla  
 tus habetis <sup>13</sup> milites ite custodite  
 sicut <sup>14</sup> ipsi scitis illi ha<sup>1</sup>tem <sup>15</sup> munierunt sēpul  
 chrum <sup>16</sup> [et] <sup>17</sup> signa[uerunt] lapidem <sup>18</sup> et disces  
 serunt <sup>18</sup> cum custodibus . . — \*

<sup>1-1</sup> Expuncted: above l. 1, uiso terræ  
 motu et his.

<sup>2</sup> fu expuncted.

<sup>3</sup> Expuncted: above the line, ei.

<sup>4-4</sup> Erased: over erasure, Cum sero ha<sup>1</sup>-  
 tem, followed by space.

<sup>5</sup> Above the line, esset.

<sup>6</sup> Above the line (over second e), i.

<sup>7-7</sup> Expuncted.

<sup>8</sup> et before accip. in margin; first i  
 transformed into e; issset expuncted;  
 above line, to corpore.

<sup>9-9</sup> Expuncted.

<sup>10</sup> h expuncted.

<sup>11</sup> Expuncted: above the line, abiit.

<sup>12</sup> Final i changed to e.

<sup>13</sup> Above line, custodiam.

<sup>14</sup> Expuncted.

<sup>15</sup> Above the line, abeuntēs.

<sup>16</sup> Erased.

<sup>17</sup> ue altered into nt; runt erased and  
 replaced by es followed by space.

<sup>18-18</sup> Expuncted.

\* Altered to magdalena.

S. MATT. xxviii. 1--4.

f. 49 v. a.

[Ues]pere *hautem* sabbati *quæ* *lucescit in* prima  
[s]abbati uenit maria magdalenæ  
[et] altera maria uidere sēpulch  
rum *et ecce* terræ motus *factus est* magnus  
5 angelus *enim* domini descendit decælo *et*  
accedens reuoluit lapidem *et* sede  
bat super eum erat *hautem* aspectus eius *sicut* fulgor  
et uestimenta eius candida *sicut* nix *præ* timo



S. LUC. iv. 5.

f. 58 r. b.

25 in omni uerbo dei et duxit illum *iterum*  
zabulus inmontem excelsum  
ualde *et* <sup>1</sup> ostendit ei omnia.

<sup>1</sup> e is written above i

S. LUC. iv. 5-16.

f. 58 v. a.

regna mundi in momento tem  
 poris et ait ei *tibi dabo potesta*  
*tem hanc uniuersam et gloriam*  
*ipsorum quia mihi tradita sunt et cui*  
 5 uolueris do illa tu *ergo si adora*  
*ueris me erunt omnia tua et re*  
*spondens ih̄s dixit illi scriptum est enim*  
*dominum deum tuum adorabis et illi*  
*seruies et duxit eum in iherusalem*  
 10 *et statuit eum supra pinnam tem*  
*pli et dixit ei si filius dei es mitte*  
*té hinc deorsum scriptum est*  
*enim quoniam angelis suis mandauit*  
*deuté ut custodiant té quia in*  
 15 *manibus suis tollent té né for*  
*te offendas ad lapidem pedem*  
*tuum et respondens ih̄s ait illi scrip*  
*tum est non temptabis dominum deum tuum*  
*et consummata omni temptati*  
 20 *one zabulus recessit ab eo*  
*usque ad tempus., \* f: in galileam*  
 Et *egressus est ih̄s in uirtute spiritus*  
*et fama exiit per uniuersam regi*  
*onem de illo, et ipse docebat*  
 25 *in synagogis eorum et magnifica*  
*batur ab omnibus., \* f: tritus*  
 Et *uenit nazareth ubi erat nu*  
*et intrauit secundum consuetudinem*

S. Luc. iv. 16-24.

f. 58 v. b.

suam die sabbati insinagogam  
 et surrexit legere et traditus est  
 illi liber esaia<sup>e</sup> profeta<sup>e</sup> et utre  
 uoluit librum inuenit locum ubi est  
 5 scriptum spiritus domini super me<sup>e</sup> propter  
 quod unexit me euangelizare  
 pauperibus misit me predicare  
 captiuis remissionem et cecis ui  
 sum dimittere confractos in re  
 10 misione prædicare annum domini  
 acceptum et diem retributionis  
 et complicit librum et reddidit  
 ministro et sedit et omnium in si  
 nagoga erant oculi intendentes  
 15 in eum cæpit hautem dicere ad illos iam  
 hodie inpleta est scriptura  
 hæc in auribus uestris.— \*  
 Et omnes <sup>1</sup> illi <sup>2</sup> testimonium dabant  
 et mirabantur in uerbis gratiæ  
 20 quæ procedebant de ore ipsius  
 et dicebant nonne hic est filius io  
 [seph \* et] ait illis utique dicitis mihi,  
 hanc similitudinem medice curā  
 tē ipsum quanta audiui<sup>mus</sup> fac  
 25 ta in cafarnauum fac hic et in  
 patria tua, \* [a]it hautem <sup>3</sup> ih̄s amen  
 dico uobis quia nemo profeta ac  
 ceptus est in patria sua \*

<sup>1, 2</sup> Marked for transposition| <sup>3</sup> Expuncted.

S. LUC. iv. 25-34.

f. 59 r. a.

<sup>1</sup> [*in*] ueritate dico uobis multæ  
 uiduę erant in diebus heliæ in  
 israhel quando elusum est cælum  
 annis tribus et mensibus sex cum  
 5 facta est fames magna in omni  
 terra et adnullam illarum misus est  
 heleas nisi in sarepta sidoniæ ad  
 mulierem uiduam et multi lepro  
 si in israhel erant sub heleseio pro  
 10 feta et nemo illorum mundatus est  
 nisi neman syrus et repleti sunt  
 omnes ira insinagoga hec audien  
 tes et surrexerunt et iecerunt illum  
 extra ciuitatem et duxerunt illum usque  
 15 ad supracilium montis supra  
 quem ciuitas illorum erat ædifi  
 cata ut præcipitarent cum ipse  
 hautem transiens per medium illorum ibat +  
<sup>2</sup> [*et*] descendit cafarnauum ciuita  
 20 tem galileæ ibique docebat illos  
 sabbatis \* et stupebant in doctri  
 na eius quia in potestate erat ser  
 mo <sup>3</sup> ipsius \* /: nium inmundum  
 Et in sinagoga <sup>4</sup> erat homo habens dæmo  
 25 et exclamauit uoce magna  
 dicens quid nobis et tibi ihū naza  
 rene uenisti perdere nós

<sup>1</sup> This word is apparently erased, and

IN written in the margin.

<sup>2</sup> Erased : in margin, Et.<sup>3</sup> Above the line, eius.<sup>4</sup> Above the line, eorum

S. Luc. iv. 34-42.

f. 59 r. b.

scio <sup>1</sup> qui sis <sup>2</sup> sanctus dei et increpauit  
 illum ihs *dicens* obmutesce et exi  
 ab illo et cum proiecisset illum demo-  
 nium in medium exit ab illo n[*ihilque*]  
 5 nocuit illum et factus est pavor  
 magnus in omnes et conloquebantur  
 ad inuicem dicentes quis est iste  
 sermo quod in potestate et uirtute  
 imperat inmundis spiritibus  
 10 et exeunt et deuulgabatur fama  
 de illo in omnem locum regionis . . — \*  
 Surgens *haute*m <sup>3</sup> ihs desinagoga intra-  
 uit in domum simonis socrus  
*haute*m simonis tenebatur magnis  
 15 febribus et rogauerunt illum pro ea  
 et stans super illam imperauit  
 febri et dimissit eam et continuo  
 surrexit et ministrabat eis  
 occidente *haute*m sole omnes qui habe-  
 20 bant infirmos uariis langori-  
 bus adducebant illos ad eum at-  
 ille singulis manum inponens  
 curabat eos.— \* *f*: mantia et di-  
 Ex iebant *haute*m etiam demonia cla-  
 25 centia qui tu es filius dei et increpans  
 eos non sinebat eis loqui quia sciebant  
 xpm ipsum esse.— \* *f*: in desertum  
 Facta *haute*m die proficiscens ibat

<sup>1</sup> Above the line, te.<sup>2</sup> Above the line, tu es.<sup>3</sup> Expuncted.

S. LUC. iv. 42—v. 8.

f. 59 v. a.

locum et turba requirebant eum et uene-  
 runt usque ad ipsum et retinebant eum  
 ne discederet ab eis quibus ille ait  
 quia et aliis ciuitatibus oportet me  
 5 euangelizare regnum dei <sup>1</sup>ad hoc enim <sup>2</sup>  
 misus sum et erat predicans insinago-  
 gis galilee.— \* f: ut audirent  
 Factum est haitem cum turbæ iruerent in eum  
 uerbum dei et ipse stans secus stagnum  
 10 genezareth uidit duas naues  
 stantes secus stagnum piscatore  
 haitem exillis discenderant ut leuarent  
 retia sua ascendens haitem in unam  
 nauem quæ erat simonis rogauit  
 15 eum ut adduceret a terra aliqua  
 ntulum in altum et sedens denauit  
 eula turbas.— \* f: duc in altum  
 Ut cessaunt haitem loqui dixit ad simonem  
 et laxate retia uestra in capturam  
 20 et respondens simon dixit ei præceptor  
 per totam noctem laborantes nihil  
 coepimus sed in uerbo <sup>3</sup>tuo laxabo  
<sup>4</sup>retia et <sup>5</sup>ut hoc fecissent con-  
 cluserunt multitudinem piscium copi-  
 25 osam ita utrumperentur retia eorum  
 tunc aduerunt sociis suis qui erant  
 in alia naui ut uenirent et ad-  
 iuuarent eos qui cum uenerunt reple-  
 berunt ambas nauiculas ita  
 30 <sup>6</sup>ut tiner[e]gerentur \* <sup>7</sup>[hoc uiso simon] <sup>8</sup>

<sup>1-2</sup> Expuncted : above the line, uel quia  
ideo.

<sup>3</sup> Above the line, haitem.

<sup>4</sup> Expuncted : above the line, rete.

<sup>5</sup> Expuncted : above the line, cum.

<sup>6</sup> The second e in meregerentur erased.

<sup>7-8</sup> Erased : over the erasure, Quod  
cum uidere, and below the line,  
simon petrus.

S. LUC. v. 8-16.

f. 59 v. b.

procedit ad genua ihū *dicens* rogo  
 tē exi amē *quia* homo peccator sum  
*domine* timor enim inuasserat illum  
 et omnes qui cum illo erant in captura  
 5 piscium *quam* coeperant similiter *hautem* ia  
 cobum et iohannem filios zebedei qui erant  
 socii simonis.— \* *f*: ex hoc iam eris

Et <sup>1</sup> *dixit* ad simonem ih̄s nolitimere  
 homines capiens et subductis

10 nauculis interram relictis om  
 nibus secuti sunt eum.— \* *f*: et ecce uir

Et factum est cum esset in una ciuitatum  
 plenus lepra et <sup>2</sup> ipse procedens  
 infaciem <sup>3</sup> rogabat eum *dicens* <sup>4</sup> si

15 uis <sup>4</sup> <sup>5</sup> domine potes me mundare  
 et extendens manum ih̄s tetigit  
 eum *dicens* uolo mundare et *confes*  
 tim lepra eius discessit ab eo et <sup>7</sup> *præ*  
 cipit illi <sup>8</sup> ih̄s utnemini diceret

20 <sup>9</sup> et *dixit* <sup>9</sup> ua de <sup>10</sup> et ostende tē sacer  
 doti et offer pro emundatione  
 tua sicut *præcipit* moyses ut sit  
 intestimonium illis.— \* *f*: de eo <sup>12</sup> et

Per ambulabat <sup>11</sup> *hautem* magis sermo

25 conueniebant turbæ multæ ut  
 audirent et curarentur ab in  
 firmitatibus suis \* ipse *hautem* <sup>13</sup> se  
 cessit in <sup>14</sup> desertum et orabat \*

<sup>1</sup> Expuncted: above the line, ait.

<sup>2</sup> Expuncted: above the line, uidens  
 ihū.

<sup>3</sup> ha expuncted: above the line, ui.

<sup>4,4,5</sup> Marked for transposition.

<sup>6</sup> Expuncted: above the line, illo.

<sup>7</sup> In margin, ipse.

<sup>8</sup> Expuncted.

<sup>9,9</sup> Expuncted: above the line, sed.

<sup>10</sup> Expuncted.

<sup>11</sup> Expuncted.

<sup>12</sup> Above the line, illo.

<sup>13</sup> In margin, uel secedebat.

<sup>14</sup> um expuncted: above the line, uel o.

S. LUC. v. 17-25.

f. 60 r. a.

Et factum est in una dierum et ipse <sup>1</sup> docens et erant farisaei <sup>2</sup> et legis doctores qui uenerant ex omni castello galileæ et iudæ et hi  
 5 erusalem et uirtus erat domini ad sanandos eos.— \* *f*: in lecto  
 Et ecce uiri portantes hominem qui erat paraliticus <sup>3</sup> quærebant eum <sup>4</sup> inducere et ponere ante eum  
 10 et non inuenientes qua parte illum ponerent *preturba* ascenderunt supertectum et pertegulas summiserunt eum cum lecto ante ihm uidens *hautem*  
 ihs fidem eorum dixit homini remisa  
 15 sunt tibi peccata tua et coeperunt cogitare scribæ et farissei in cordibus suis dicentes quis est hic qui loquitur blasphemiam quis potest dimittere peccata nisi solus  
 20 deus sciens *hautem* ihs cogitationes eorum dixit ad eos quid cogitatis mala in cordibus uestris *quod est* facilius dicere remisa sunt tibi peccata tua aut dicere  
 25 surge et ambula ut *hautem* sciatis quia filius hominis potestatem habet super terram dimittendi peccata dixit paralitico tibi dico surge et tolle grabatum tuum et uade  
 30 in domum tuam et confestim

<sup>1</sup> Above the line, sedebat.<sup>2</sup> Above the line, sedentes.<sup>3</sup> Above the line, et.<sup>4</sup> Above the line, uel inferre.



S. LUC. v. 25-35.

f. 60 r. b.

surgens coram illis tulit in  
 quo iacebat *et* abit in dom-  
 um suam magnificans dominum *et*  
 stupor adprehendit omnes  
 5 *et* magnificabant deum *et* re-  
 pleti sunt timore dicentes quia  
 uidimus hodie mirabilia \*  
 Et post hæc exiit *et* uidit puplicanum  
 nomine leui sedentem ad tylon  
 10 eum *et* ait illi sequere me *et* relic-  
 tis omnibus <sup>1</sup> secutus est eum \* [et fecit]  
<sup>2</sup> illi leui <sup>3</sup> cenam magnam in domu  
 sua *et* erat turba multa pupli  
 canorum *et* aliorum discumbentium  
 15 *et* murmurauerunt farisæi  
*et* scribæ dicentes ad discipulos eius qua-  
 re cum puplicanis *et* peccatori-  
 bus <sup>4</sup> manducat *et* <sup>5</sup> bibit <sup>6</sup> magister  
 uester <sup>6</sup> \* <sup>7</sup> [et <sup>8</sup> r]espondit ihs <sup>9</sup> *et* dixit eis non  
 20 egent qui sani sunt medico sed qui male  
 habent non ueni uocare iustos sed  
 peccatores in penitentia at  
 illi dixerunt ei quare discipuli iohannis  
 ieiunant frequenter similiter  
 25 *et* farisæorum *et* orationes  
 faciunt tui hautem discipuli edunt  
*et* bibunt ait illis numquid  
 possent filii sponsi ieiuna-  
 re quam diu cum illis est sponsus  
 30 uenient enim dies cum auferetur ab eis

<sup>1</sup> Above the line, surgens.<sup>2</sup> Expuncted : over the line, ei.<sup>3</sup> In margin, uel conuiuium mag.<sup>4</sup> Above the line, at the end of the word,  
uel is (sic).<sup>5</sup> Above the line, over the final letter,  
uel is.<sup>6-6</sup> Expuncted.<sup>7</sup> et r crased : over erasure, R.<sup>8</sup> At the end of the word, above the line,  
ens.<sup>9</sup> Expuncted.

S. Luc. v. 35—vi. 4.

f. 60 v. a.

sponsus *et tunc ieiunabunt in illis diebus*  
*Dixit haitem parabolam ad eos quia nemo*  
*commissuram de uestimento no*  
*no committit in uestimentum*  
 5 *uetus alioquin scindetur et ueteri*  
*non conueniet commisura noua*  
*et nemo mittit uinum nouum*  
*in <sup>1</sup> utres <sup>2</sup> ueteres alio quin <sup>3</sup> rum*  
*pet uinum nouum utres <sup>4</sup> ueteres*  
 10 *et ipsum effundetur et utres peri*  
*bunt sed uinum nouum in utres*  
*nouos ponunt et utraque*  
*conseruantur et nemo bibens ue*  
*tus statim uult nouum dicit enim*  
 15 *melius uetus est., \* f: primo*  
*Factum est haitem in sabbato secundo*  
*cum transiret ihs per segitem uel*  
*lebant discipuli eius spicas et confri*  
*ngentes manibus manducab*  
 20 *ant quidam haitem ex farisaeis di*  
*cebant eis quid facitis sab*  
*batis quod non licet et respondit ihs*  
*ad eos nec hoc legistis quid fece*  
*rit dauid cum essuriret ipse et*  
 25 *qui cum eo erant quomodo intrauit*  
*in domum dei et panes propositi*  
*tionis sumpsit et manduca*  
*uit et dedit eis qui cum eo erant*

<sup>1, 2</sup> Marked for transposition.<sup>3</sup> Above the line (over e), i<sup>4</sup> Expuncted.

S. LUC. vi. 4-14.

f. 60 v. b.

quos non licebat manducare  
 nisi solis sacerdotibus *et dixit eis quia*  
*dominus est filius hominis etiam sabbati \**  
 Factum est *hautem* in alio sabbato ut  
 5 intraret in sinagoga *et doce*  
*ret et erat homo ibi habens manum*  
*aridam dexteram* obseruabant  
*hautem* scribæ et farisæi si in sa  
 bbato curaret ut inuenirent  
 10 accussare eum ipse uero sciebat  
 cogitationes eorum *et ait homini qui*  
*habebat manum aridam surge*  
*et stá in medium et surrexit et*  
*stetit ait hautem* ad eos ih̄s interrogo  
 15 uos s ilicet sabbatis bene  
 facere *aut male aut animam*  
*saluam facere aut perdere et cir*  
*cumspectis illis omnibus dixit homini*  
*extende manum tuam et extendens*  
 20 *manum restituta est manus eius sicut*  
*et altera ipsi hautem repleti sunt insipientia*  
*et conloquebantur ad inuicem quidnam*  
*facerent de <sup>1</sup> homine \** factum est *hautem* in  
 illis diebus exiit in montem oilare  
 25 *et erat pernoctans in oratione dei \**  
 [et] *cum dies factus esset uocauit ad*  
*se discipulos suos et elegit duodecim*  
*ex ipsis quos et apostolos nomi*  
*nauit simonem quem cognominauit*

<sup>1</sup> *Expuncted; above the line, ih̄u.*

S. LUC. vi. 14-24.

f. 61 r. a.

[petrum et andream] fratrem eius et iaco  
 [bum et ioh] annem et philippum et bar  
 [th]alomeum et thomam et matheum  
 et iacobum alfei et simonem qui uocatur  
 5 zelotis et iudam iacobi et iudam  
 scarioth qui fuit <sup>1</sup> traditor \* [et dis]  
 cendiens cum eis in loco campestri  
 stetit et turba discipulorum eius et multitudo  
 copiosa plebis ab omni iudea et  
 10 hierusalem et transfretum et ma  
 ritimam et sidonis qui uenerant  
 ut audirent eum et sanarentur alan  
 goribus suis et qui uexabantur aspi  
 ribus immundis curabantur et omnes  
 15 turbæ querebant eum tangere quia  
 uirtus de illo <sup>2</sup> exi[e]bat et sanabat  
 omnes \* et ipse <sup>3</sup> adleuans <sup>4</sup> oculos  
<sup>5</sup> ad discipulos suos dixit.—  
 B eati pauperes <sup>6</sup> spiritu quia uestrum est reg  
 20 num dei.— \* f: turabimini.— \*  
 B eati qui nunc esuritis quia sa  
 B eati qui nunc <sup>7</sup> lugitis <sup>8</sup> quoniam ridebitis.— \*  
 B eati eritis cum uos oderint homines  
 et cum uos sepeauerint et expro  
 25 barent et iecerint nomen uestrum  
 tamquam malum propter filium hominis gau  
 dete in illa die et exultate ecce  
 enim mercis uestra magna est in cæ  
 lis secundum hæc enim faciebant profetis pa  
 30 tres eorum \* uerum tamen uae uobis di  
 uitibus qui habetis consolationem

<sup>1</sup> Above the line, uel pro.<sup>2</sup> The second e erased.<sup>3</sup> Expuncted: above the line, eleuatis.<sup>4</sup> Above the line (over the second o), i.<sup>5</sup> Expuncted: above the line, in.<sup>6</sup> Expuncted.<sup>7</sup> Above the line, fletis.<sup>8</sup> The last letter expuncted, and the remainder altered into quia.

S. Luc. vi. 25-34.

f. 61 r. b.

uestram uæ uobis qui saturati estis  
 quia essuri etis uæ uobis qui riditis nunc  
 quia flebitis et lugebitis \* uæ uobis cum  
 benedixerint homines secundum hæc facie  
 5 bant pseudoprophetis patres eorum \*  
 sed uobis dico qui auditis diligite  
 inimicos uestros et benefacite  
 his qui uos odierunt benedicite ma-  
 ledicentibus uobis orate pro calum-  
 10 niantibus uobis \* et qui te <sup>1</sup> percusserit  
 in maxillam præbe illi et alteram et ei  
 qui aufert tibi tunicam etiam pallium  
 noli prohibere omni petenti te  
 tribue et qui aufert quæ tua sunt ne  
 15 repetas \* et prout multis uobis fa-  
 ciant homines sic facite illis. simi  
 [liter \* et] si dilegitis eos qui uos diligunt  
 quæ uobis est gratia. nam et peccatores  
 diligentes se diligunt. etsi benefi-  
 20 ceritis eis qui uobis benefaciunt  
 quæ uobis gratia est. cum et peccatores  
 hautem ipsi faciunt. et si motuum de-  
 deritis eis a quibus speratis uos  
 recipere quæ gratia est uobis. nam  
 25 et peccatores peccatoribus fe-  
 nerant ut recipiant æqualia :  
 uerum tamen amate inimicos uestros  
 et benefacite eis et motuum date <sup>2</sup>  
<sup>3</sup>[nec] <sup>4</sup>desperantes et erit merces uestra  
 30 in cælis multa. et eritis filii alti-  
 ssimi quia ipse benignus est super

<sup>1</sup> sser expuncted : above the line, t.<sup>2</sup> nihil is added in the margin.<sup>3</sup> erased.<sup>4</sup> Above the line (over first e), i.

S. Luc. vi. 35-44.

f. 61 v. a.

- ingratos *et* malos estote miseri  
 cordes *sicut* et pater uester misericors est \*  
 [n]olite iudicare né iudicetur de  
 uobis nolite *condempnare* ne  
 5 *condempnemini* dimitite *et* dimi  
 ttetur uobis. <sup>1</sup> *et* dabitur uobis mensu  
 ram bonam *conuersam et coagitatam*  
*et superfluentem* dabunt insinum  
 uestrum. eadem quippe mensura qua  
 10 mensi fueritis remetietur uobis., \*  
<sup>2</sup> *Dixit* *haudem* illis *et similitudinem* num quid  
 potest cæcus cæcum ducere non  
 né utrique infoueam cadent \* [non est]  
 discipulus super magistrum. *perfectus haudem*  
 15 *omnis* erit si sit *sicut* magister eius \* [quid]  
*haudem* uides fistucam in oculo fratris  
 tui *et* trabem *que* in oculo tuo est non  
 consideras. aut quomodo potes di  
 cere fratri tuo sine frater  
 20 *ieciam* fistucam de oculo tuo. *et* in  
 oculo tuo trabis est ipse in oculo  
 tuo <sup>3</sup> *trabrem* non uides. hippo  
 chrita eice primum trabem deocu  
 lo tuo *ettunc* perspicies iecire fis  
 25 *tucam* deoculo fratris tui \* [non est enim]  
*arbor* bona *que* faciat fructus  
*malos*. neque arbor mala *que* fa  
 ciat fructus bonos unaque *que*  
*arbor* <sup>4</sup> *exfructu* suo cognosc  
 30 [itur \* neque] *enim* collegunt despinís
- <sup>1</sup> Above the line, date.  
<sup>2</sup> Under this word, in the margin, is written uel dicebat.  
<sup>3</sup> The second r expuncted.  
<sup>4</sup> Above the line, de.

S. LUC. vi. 44—vii. 4.

f. 61 v. b.

ficus neque de ro[bo uindemiant]  
 [uuam \* b]onus homo de bono [thesauro]  
 cordis sui profert bona malus  
 homo demalo profert malum ex abun  
 5 dantia enim cordis os eius loquitur \* [quid]  
 hautem uocatis me domine domine et non fa  
 citis quæ dico \* <sup>1</sup>[omnis] qui uenit ad me  
 et audit uerba mea et facit ea  
 ostendam uobis cui sit similis  
 10 similis est homini ædificanti domum  
 suam et fodit in altum et posuit  
 fundamenta super petram inun  
 datione hautem facta inlsum est flu  
 men domui illi et non potuit eam  
 15 mouere fundata enim erat su  
 pra petram Nam qui audit uerba  
 mea et non facit ea similis factus  
 homini ædificanti domum suam sine  
 fundamento super terram inlsum est  
 20 flumen domui illi et continuo con  
 cidit et facta est ruina magna  
 domus illius., \* f: in aures plebis  
 Et factum est cum complessset omnia uerba  
 intrauit in cafarnauum centori  
 25 onis hautem cuiusdam seruus male  
 habens erat moriturus qui illi  
 pretiosus erat qui cum audisset deihū  
 misit seniores iudeorum rogans  
 eum ut ueniret etsanaret ser  
 30 uum suum at illi uenerunt et rogabant

<sup>1</sup> Erased : over erasure, Omnis.

S. LUC. vii. 4-14.

f. 62 r. a.

eum sollicete dicentes *quia dignus*  
*est ut hoc ei prestes dilegit enim gentem*  
*nostram et sinagogam ipse ædi*  
*ficauit nobis ibat haitem cum illis*  
 5 ih̄s et *cum iam non longue esset ado*  
*mu missit adeum centurio ami*  
*cos dicens domine noli uexari non enim dig*  
*nus sum ut intres . sub tec*  
*tum meum propter quod et me ipsum non*  
 10 *sum dignum arbitratus ut*  
*uenirem adte sed dic uerbo tuo et*  
*sanabitur puer meus. Nam et ego ho*  
*mo sum subpotestate constitus*  
*et habeo subme milites. et dico*  
 15 *uni uade et uadit et alio. ueni et*  
*uenit. et seruo meo dico fac hoc*  
*et facit. et hoc audito ih̄s mira*  
*tusest et conuersus sequentibus se dixit*  
 A *men dico uobis innullo talem*  
 20 *fidem inueni inisrahel \* et reuersi*  
*sunt in domum qui misi erant*  
*et inuenerunt seruum qui langue*  
*bat sanum \* [et] factum est de*  
*inceps ibat in ciuitatem quæ uo*  
 25 *catur nauim et ibant cum illo disci*  
*puli eius et turba copiosa cum ad*  
*propinquaret portam ciuitatis*  
*et ecce ferebatur mortuus*  
*filius unicus matris suae*  
 30 *et hæc uidua erat etturba multa*  
*ciuitatis sequebatur cum ea*  
*quam cum uidisset dominus mise*  
*ricordia motus dixit illis*  
*nolite flere et accessit et*  
 35 *titigit loculum et qui porta*  
 b *ant steterunt. et ait ih̄s adu*



S. Luc. vii. 14-27.

f. 62 r. b.

- liscens tibi dico surge et *resedit* pro  
 tinus *qui* mortuus erat et coepit  
 loqui *et* dedit matri suae. accepit  
*haute*m timor omnes *et* magnificabant  
 5 *dominum* dicentes *quia* profeta magnus sur  
 rexit *in* nobis *et quia* uisitauit deus ple  
 bem suam <sup>1</sup> in bono <sup>1</sup> \* [et] exiit hic ser  
 mo *in* uniuersam iudeam *et* *in* omnem  
 regionem de eo \* [et nuntiauerunt io]  
 10 hanni discipuli *eius* de omnibus his  
*et* conuocauit duos de discipulis  *suis*  
 iohannes *et* misit ad ihm *dicens*  
 tu es *qui* uenturus es an alium ex  
 spectamus illa *haute*m hora cura  
 15 uit multos a langoribus *et* pla  
 gis *et* spiritibus inmundis *et* cae  
 cis multis dedit uisum *et* res  
 pondens ihs *dixit* ite nuntiate  
 iohanni *que* uidistis *et* audistis  
 20 caeci uident clodi ambulant  
 leprosi mundantur sordi au  
 diunt mortui resurgunt *et*  
 pauperes euangelizantur  
*et* beatus *qui* in me non fuerit non  
 25 scandalizatus. Et cum disces  
 sissent nuntii iohannis coepit  
 ihs dicere de iohanne babtis  
 ta ad turbas. *quod* existis indeser  
 to uidere harundinem auen  
 30 to moueri *sed* *quod* existis uidere  
 hominem mollibus uestitum : .  
*ecce* *qui* inueste sunt pretiosa *et*  
 in deliciis in domibus  
 regum sunt : *sed* <sup>2</sup> *quod* existis uidere  
 35 profetam dico uobis etiam  
 plus *quam* profetam \* hic est de quo

<sup>1-1</sup> Expuncted.| <sup>2</sup> Altered into quid.

S. LUC. vii. 27-38.

f. 62 v. a.

scriptum est ecce mitto angelum  
 meum ante faciem tuam qui preparabit  
 viam tuam <sup>1</sup> \* dico <sup>2</sup> vobis quia nemo mai-  
 or est exnatís mulierum et amplior in pro-  
 5 fetis quam iohannis baptista \*

Dico hancem vobis minor qui est in regno dei  
 maior illo est \* et omnis populus audi-  
 ens [et] publicani iusti magnifica-  
 bant deum baptizari baptismo iohan-  
 10 nis. farisei hancem et legis doctores consi-  
 lium dei contempserunt in semet ipsis  
 ab iohanne non baptizati. \* genera-

CUi ergo similes dicam homines huius  
 tionis, similes sunt pueris sedenti  
 15 bus in foro loquentibus ad invicem di-  
 centes cantavimus vobis et non sal-  
 tastis lamentavimus vobis et non  
 planxistis venit enim iohannis neque  
 manducans neque bibens et dicunt dae-  
 20 monium habet venit filius hominis.  
 manducans et bibens et dicunt ecce ho-  
 mo devorator et bibens vinum  
 amicus publicanorum et peccatorum  
 et iustificata est sapientia ab om-

25 nibus filiis suis \* ut manduca-  
 Ro gavit hancem eum qui dicitur fariseus

ret eum eo et ingressus in do-  
 mum farisei recubuit. et ecce  
 mulier in civitate que erat pecca-  
 30 trix ut cognovit quod recubuit  
 in domu farisei retulit alaba-  
 strum ungenti plenum et stans retro  
 secus pedes eius et lacrimis riga-  
 bat pedes eius et capillis suis ca-

<sup>1</sup> Above the line, ante te.| <sup>2</sup> In margin, enim.

S. Luc. vii. 38—viii. 2.

f. 62 v. b.

- pitis *tersit* eos et osculabat[ur pedes eius]  
*et* ungebat ungento. *quod cum* uidisset fa-  
 riseus qui eum rogauerat ait intra se  
*dicens* hic si esset profeta sciret utique qua  
 5 *lis est* mulier *que* tanguit eum *quia* peccatrix  
*est* et *respondens* ihs dixit adeum. symon habeo  
 tibi dicere aliquod at ille ait magister  
 dic cui ihs dixit duo debitores erant  
 euidam feneratori unus debebat  
 10 denarios quingentos et alius denarios  
 . l . non habentibus illis unde redderent  
 donauit utrisque quis ergo illum plus  
 amauit *respondit* hancem simon existimo *quod* is  
 cui plus donatum est at ihs dixit ei  
 15 recte iudicasti *et conuersus* ad mulie-  
 rem dixit simoni uides hanc mulie-  
 rem intraui in domum tuam *aquam*  
*pedibus* meis non dedisti *hec* lacrimis *suis*  
 rigauit pedes meos *et capillis suis*  
 20 *tersit* osculum *mihi* non dedisti *hec* hancem ex quo  
 intraui osculari pedes meos non es  
 sat . oleo caput meum non unxisti *hec* <sup>1</sup> ungen-  
 to <sup>2</sup> pedes meos *propter quod* tibi dico remitten-  
 tur illi peccata multa *quoniam* dilexit mul-  
 25 tum. cui hancem paruum dimittitur paruum  
 diligit . et ait mulieri remisasunt  
 tibi peccata tua et coeperunt qui simul  
 recubuerunt cum eo dicere intra  
 se quis est hic qui etiam peccata re-  
 30 mittit *et* ait ad mulierem fides  
 tua te saluam fecit uade in pace \*  
 Et factum est deinceps  
 et ipse iter faciebat per ciui-  
 tates et uicos *praedicans* et euan-  
 35 gelizans regnum dei . et exierunt  
 . xii . discipuli cum eo *et* mulieres

<sup>1</sup> Above the line, hancem.| <sup>2</sup> Above the line, unxit.

S. LUC. viii. 2-10.

f. 63 r. a.

[aliquæ quæ erant] curate aspiritibus  
 immundis et ab infirmitatibus  
 et maria quæ uocatur magdalene  
<sup>1</sup> de qua demonia uii exierant  
 5 et iohanna uxor chuzæ procu-  
 ratoris herodis et sussanna  
 et aliæ multæ quæ ministrabant  
 adeum ex eis quæ habebant., \*  
 Cum <sup>2</sup> ergo turbæ conuenissent et qui  
 10 decurritibus ad ueniebant dixit  
 similitudinem talem ad eos ecce ex-  
 it qui seminat seminare semen  
 suum et dum seminat aliud cecidit  
 secus uiam et conculcatum est et uolue-  
 15 res illud comederunt et aliud ce-  
 cidit super petrosam et cum natum est  
 exaruit quia non habebat umore  
 aliud cecidit inter spinas et exor-  
 te sunt spine suffocauerunt illud  
 20 aliud haudem cecidit super terram bonam  
 et optimam et exortum est et fecit fr-  
 uctum centuplum et hæc dicens cla-  
 mabat qui habet aures audiendi  
 audeat interrogauerunt eum discipuli eius  
 25 quæ esset hæc similitudo quibus ipse  
 ait uobis datum est scire misterium  
 regni dei \* cæteris haudem <sup>3</sup> non est datum  
 sed <sup>3</sup> in similitudinibus ut uiden-  
 tes non uideant et audientes  
 30 non intellegant.,\*

<sup>1</sup> Above the line is written e[x].<sup>2</sup> Above the line, haudem.<sup>3-3</sup> Expuncted.

S. Luc. viii. 11-20.

f. 63 r. b.

*Hæc est haitem* <sup>1</sup> *similitudo . semen est uerbum dei*  
*quod haitem cecidit secus uiam hii sunt*  
*qui audiunt uerbum uenit haitem zabo*  
*lus et tulit decorde eorum uer*  
 5 *bum né credentes salui fiant*  
*Nam qui supra petrosam hii sunt*  
*qui cum audiunt uerbum cum gaudio*  
*accipiunt illud et hii non ha*  
*bent radices quia ad tempus*  
 10 *credunt et intempore temp*  
*tationis recedunt quod haitem inspi*  
*nis cecidit hii sunt qui audiunt et*  
*per sollicitudinem diuitiarum et*  
*dulcidinis uitæ soffocantur*  
 15 *et non adferunt fructum quod haitem ceci*  
*dit interram bonam hii sunt qui in cor*  
*de bono et obtimo audiunt uer*  
*bum et tenent et fructificant per*  
*patientiam . . , \* f: uasso aut subtus*  
 20 *Nemo* <sup>2</sup> *enim accensam lucernam cooperit*  
*lectum ponit sed supra cande*  
*labrum ut omnibus luceat \* <sup>3</sup> [non] est*  
*enim absconsum quod non manifestatur*  
*neque occultum quod non cognoscatur*  
 25 *et in palam ueniat \* <sup>4</sup> [uidete ergo] <sup>4</sup> quomodo*  
*<sup>5</sup> audietis qui enim habet dabitur ei et qui*  
*cumque non habet et quod habet auferetur*  
*<sup>6</sup> [ab eo] \* uenerunt haitem mater eius et fratres*  
*et non poterant uidere eum*  
 30 *pro turba et nuntiatum est illi*

<sup>1</sup> Above the line, uel parabula.<sup>2</sup> Above the line, haitem.<sup>3</sup> Erased: over erasure, Non.<sup>4-4</sup> Erased: over erasure, Uidete; above line, ergo.<sup>5</sup> e expuncted.<sup>6</sup> ab eo u erased: in margins, ab illo; U, followed by space containing the erasure.

S. Luc. viii. 20-28.

f. 63 v. a.

- quia mater tua et fratres tui stant  
 foris nolentes te uidere at ille  
 respondit mater et fratres mei hi sunt  
 qui uerbum dei audiunt et faciunt \**
- 5 Et factum est in una dierum et ipse as-  
 cendit in nauem cum discipulis suis et ait  
 adeos transeamus transfre-  
 tum et ascenderunt nauigantibus hautem  
 illis obdormiuit et descendit
- 10 tempestas magna in stagnum  
 et conplebatur nauis fluctibus et peri-  
 clitabantur accedunt hautem discipuli  
 suscitauerunt eum dicentes procep-  
 tor perimus at ille surgens
- 15 imperauit uento et tempestati  
 aque et cessauit et facta est tr-  
 anquellitas magna dixit hautem eis ubi  
 est fides uestra et timentes mira-  
 ti sunt dicentes ad inuicem quis est hic
- 20 quia uentis imperat et mari et obe-  
 diunt ei per nauigauerunt hautem in re-  
 gionem gerasinorum que est contra  
 fretum et contra galileam exit ad  
 terram et occurrit illi uir quidam
- 25 qui habebat demonium iam temp-  
 oribus multis et uestimentum non in-  
 duit neque in domu manebat  
 sed in monumentis uidens hautem ihm  
 exclamauit uoce magna

S. Luc. viii. 28-35.

f. 63 v. b.

dicens *et* procedit ad pedes [eius]  
 quid mihi *ettibi* est ihū fili dei altissi  
 mi obsecro tē né mētorqu  
 eas *præcipit hautem* spiritui immundo  
 5 ut exiret ab homine multis *enim*  
 temporibus arripiebat eum  
*et* alligabatur catenis *et* conpe  
 dibus *et* custodiebatur *et* disru  
 ptis uinculis agebatur ade  
 10 mone in deserta loca *et* inter  
 rogabat eum ih̄s ~~respon~~ dic  
 ens *quod tibi* nomen est at ille resp  
 ondit legio multa *enim* demonia  
 erant *et* rogabant eum né im  
 15 peraret eis ut in abisum irent.—  
 E rat *hautem* ibi grex porcorum mu  
 ltorum pascentium in monte *et*  
 rogauerunt eum demonia dicentia  
 si iecis nōs mitte nōs in gregem  
 20 porcorum at ille dixit ite *et* illi  
 euntes introierunt in porcos  
*et* impetu abiit grex porcorum  
 per præceps in mare *et* suffocati  
 sunt uidentes *hautem* qui eos pascebant  
 25 pastores *quod* factum est fugerunt  
*et* nuntiauerunt in ciuitatem  
*et* in agros exierunt *hautem* uidere  
*quod* factum fuerat *et* uenerunt  
 ad ihm *et* inuenerunt hominem

S. Luc. viii. 35-43.

f. 64 r. a.

- s[edent]e[m] aquo demonia exierant  
 uestitum et sana mente nuntia  
 uerunt *hautem* illis qui uiderant *quomodo* fac  
 tus esset sanus alegione roga  
 5 uerunt *hautem* illum omnis multitudo re  
 gionis gerasinorum ut discede  
 ret ab eis *quia* timore magno  
 tenebantur . — \* *f. et reuersus est*  
 Ipse *hautem* ascendit in nauiculum  
 10 rogabat *hautem* illum uir aquo demo  
 nia exierant ut *cum* ipso esset di  
 missit *hautem* illum *dicens* redi in dom  
 um tuam et narra *rra* quanta  
 tibi fecerit dominus et habiit per  
 15 uniuersam ciuitatem *predicans*  
 quanta ih̄s fecit illi . — \*  
 Factum est *hautem* cum ih̄s redisset exco  
 epit eum turba erant *hautem* omnes  
 exspectantes eum et ecce uenit  
 20 uir cui nomen erat zariis  
 et hic erat princeps sinagoge  
 et procedit ad pedes ih̄u rogans  
 eum ut intraret in domum suam  
*quia* filia sua unica *quæ* erat illi  
 25 fere annorum xii et *hæc* moriebatur  
 Et factum est dum iret ih̄s aturbis sic  
*comprimebatur* ut soffocarent eum  
 mulier quædam *quæ* fluxum



S. Luc. viii. 43-50.

f. 64 r. b.

- sanguinis patiebatur ab annis  
 xii *quæ* medicis erogauerat om  
 nem sub stantiam suam nec ob ullo  
 potuit curari accessit retro  
 5 et tetigit fimbrias uestimen  
 ti *eius et confestim* stetit fluxus san  
 guinis ih̄s *hautem* uidens *quod* exierat  
 ab eo uirtus interrogabat  
 quis est qui *mé* tetigit negabant  
 10 *hautem* omnes dixit p̄trus et qui *cum* illo  
 erant turbæ *té* comprimunt et  
 dicis quis *mé* tetigit atille dixit  
 tetigit *mé* aliquis ego *enim* scio *à*  
*mé* exisse uirtutem uidens *hautem*  
 15 mulier *quod* non lateret uenit  
 tremens et procedit ante pedes  
 ih̄u et ob *quam* causam tetigit eum  
 indicauit coram omni populo  
*et quem* ad modum sanataest at  
 20 ille dixit filia fides tua *té* sal  
 uam fecit uade inpace ad  
 hūc eo loquente uenit adprin  
 cipem sinagogæ nuntius  
*dicens quia* filia tua mortua est  
 25 nolí uexare magistrum ih̄s  
 uero audito uerbum hoc ait pa  
 tri puellæ nolí timere  
 crede *tantum* et saluá erit

S. LUC. viii. 51—ix. 5.

f. 64 v. a.

et *cum* uenisset ad domum non per  
 missit intrare *quemquam* secum  
 nisi petrum et iacobum et iohannem  
 et patrem puellæ et matrem  
 5 flebant omnes et plangebant  
 eam at ille dixit nolite flere  
 non est enim mortua puella sed  
 dormit et diridebant cum sci  
 entes quod mortua esset ipse  
 10 *hautem* tenens manum eius clamauit  
 dicens puella surge et reuer  
 sus est spiritus eius et surrexit continuo  
 et iussit ei dari manducare  
 et stupuerunt parentes eius et ex  
 15 pauerunt quibus præcipit ne ali  
 cui dicerent quod factum est \*  
 conuocatis <sup>1</sup> xii discipulis dedit  
 eis uirtutem et potestatem super  
 omnia demonia ut curarent  
 20 omnem languorem et missit  
 eos predicare regnum dei et sana  
 re infirmos \* [et] ait ad <sup>2</sup> eos nihil  
 tuleritis in uiam non uirgam non pe  
 ram non panem non pecuniam neque  
 25 duas tunicas habueritis  
 in *quancunque* domum intraueritis  
 ibi manete et inde ne exea  
 [tis \* et] *quicumque* non <sup>3</sup> recipiit uos

<sup>1</sup> Above the line, *hautem*.<sup>3</sup> Above the line (above t), u.<sup>2</sup> Above the line, illos.

S. LUC. ix. 5-12.

f. 64. v. b.

exeuntes deciuitate ex[cuti]  
 te puluerem depedibus uestris  
 intestimonium illis.— \* *f*: ella

E gressi *hautem* circum ibant per cast  
 5 et ciuitates euangelizantes et eu  
 rantes ubique \* audiuit *hautem* he  
 rodis tetracha omnia que era  
 nt facta ab eo et hesitabat  
 eo quod diceretur aquibus *dam* quia iohannis

10 surrexit amotuis <sup>1</sup> aquibus  
 uero quia helias apa  
 ruit ab aliis *hautem* profetaum  
 de antiquis su rexisset  
 et ait herodis <sup>2</sup> iohannem *hautem* ego de

15 collaui quis *hautem* est iste de quo  
 audio <sup>3</sup> talia et quesitum cum uidere \*  
 [et] reuersi apostoli dixerunt ei que  
 cumque fecerunt \* et adsumptis illis  
 secessit seorsum in locum deser

20 tum qui uocatur bethzaida quod  
 cum cognouissent turbæ secutæ  
 sunt eum et excoepit eos et loque  
 batur eis de regno dei et eos qui  
 curari indigebant sanabat \*

25 D ies <sup>4</sup> uero coeperat declinare et  
 accesserunt xii discipuli eius dixerunt  
 ei dimitte turbas ut eant cir  
 ca castella et uicos et refici  
 ant se

<sup>1</sup> At end, in margin, *dam*.<sup>2</sup> In margin, *nem*.<sup>3</sup> Above the line, *ego*.<sup>4</sup> Expuncted; above the line, *hautem*.

S. Luc. ix. 12-21.

f. 65 r. a.

- [et inue]nient escas *quia* hic in loco  
deserto sumus ait *hautem* ad eos  
date illis uos manducare  
at illi dixerunt *non sunt* nobis plus  
5 *quam* quinque panes et duo pisces nisi  
nos eamus et emamus in omnem  
hanc *turbam* escas erant enim fere  
quinque milia uirorum ait *hautem* ad  
discipulos suos facite eos discum  
10 bere per conuiuia quinquagenos  
et ita fecerunt et discumberunt omnes  
acceptis *hautem* quinque panibus et duobus  
piscibus respexit in celum et be  
nedixit super illos et fregit de  
15 dit discipulis suis ut ponerent  
ante turbas et manducauerunt  
omnes et saturati sunt et sublatum est  
quod superfuit illis fragmento  
rum cophini xii.— \* *f*: discipulis suis.  
20 Et factum est cum <sup>1</sup> solis esset orans cum  
interrogauit eos dicens quem me  
esse dicunt *turbæ* at illi dix  
erunt iohannem baptistam alii  
*hautem* heliam aut unum ex prophetis  
25 prioribus <sup>2</sup> at *hautem* eis uos *hautem* quem me  
dicitis esse respondens simon  
petrus dixit xpm dei. — \*  
At ille increpans illos precipit
- <sup>1</sup> i expuncted ; above the line, u. | <sup>2</sup> Above the line (after a), i.

S. Luc. ix. 21-28.

f. 65 r. b.

né cui dicerent hóc dicens  
 quia oportet filium hominis multa  
 pati *et* reprobrari a principibus  
 et senioribus *et* scribis *et* occidi  
 5 *et* post tertium diem resurgere \*  
 [d]icebat *haute[m]* ad omnes sí quis uult  
 post mé uenire abnegat se  
 ipsum sibi *ettollat* crucem suam  
*et* sequatur mé qui *enim* uoluerit ani  
 10 *ma[m]* suam saluam facere per  
 d[e]t eam Nam qui perdiderit ani  
*ma[m]* suam propter mé hic saluam  
 faciet eam *quod enim* proficiet homini  
 sí <sup>1</sup> lueretur uniuersum mundum  
 15 sé ipsum *haute[m]* perdat *et* detrimen  
 tum sui faciat \* nam qui mé eru  
 buerit *et* meos sermones hunc  
*et* filius hominis erubescet cum ue  
 nerit in maiestate sua *et* pa  
 20 tris sui *et* sanctorum angelorum \*  
 [d]ico *haute[m]* uobis uere sunt híc ali  
 qui stantes qui non gustabunt  
 mortem donec uideant filium  
 hominis in gloria sua factum  
 25 *est haute[m]* post *hac* uerba fere post dies  
 octo adsumpsit petrum  
*et* iohannem *et* iacobum *et* ascen  
 dit in montem ut oraret

<sup>1</sup> First e changed into c.

S. Luc. ix. 29-36.

f. 65 v. a.

et dum oraret factaest spe  
 cies aspectus eius altera et  
 nestitus eius albus et refulgens  
 et ecce duo viri loquentes  
 5 cum eo erant haitem moyses et helias  
 apparentes in maiestate  
 et dicebant excessum eius quem  
 completurus erat in iherusa  
 lem petrus haitem et qui cum eo erant  
 10 grauari sunt somno et euige  
 lantes viderunt maiestatem  
 eius et duos viros qui adstabant cum illo  
 Et factum est cum discederent ab eo  
 ait petrus ad ih̄m magister  
 15 bonum est hic esse nobis et faci  
 amus tria tabernacula  
 unum tibi et unum moysi et unum  
 heliae nesciens quod diceret  
 hoc <sup>1</sup> eo loquente factaest nubes  
 20 et inumbravit eos et timue  
 runt intrantibus haitem illis in nu  
 bem vox facta est in nube  
 dicens hic est filius meus dilec  
 tissimus hunc audite et cum  
 25 vox facta esset inuentus est  
 ih̄s solus et ipsi tacerunt  
 et <sup>2</sup> nemi dixerunt in illis di  
 cebat quicquam ex illis quae viderant \*

<sup>1</sup> In margin, haitem.| <sup>2</sup> Above the line, at the end of the word, ni.

S. LUC. ix. 37-44.

f. 65 v. b.

F actum est hautem in sequent[i die]  
 discendentibus illis demonte  
 occurrit illis turba mul-  
 ta et ecce uir deturba-  
 5 exclamauit *dicens* magister  
 obsecro té respice in fi-  
 lium meum quia unicus est mihi et ecce  
 spiritus immundus adprehendit  
 eum et subito clamat eledit  
 10 et disipat eum cum spuma et de-  
 laniens eum uix discedit ab eo  
 et rogauit discipulos tuos ut eicere-  
 nt illum et non potuerunt ipse hautem  
 respondens dixit ógeneratio inere-  
 15 dula quo usque patiar uós quo  
 usque s[um] apud uos adduc  
 filium tuum huc dum accidisset  
 elidit eum demonium et dissipa-  
 uit eum et inerepauit ih̄s  
 20 spiritum immundum et sanauit  
 puerum et reddidit <sup>2</sup>patri  
<sup>3</sup>[eius \* et] stupebant omnes in  
 magnitudinem dei \* et mira-  
 bantur omnes super omnia que  
 25 faciebat ih̄s dixit hautem ad dis-  
 cipulos suos ponite nos in cor-  
 dibus nestrís sermones istos  
 filius hautem hominis tradetur

<sup>1</sup> Erased: over the erasure, ero.<sup>2</sup> Above the line, illum.<sup>3</sup> Erased: in right margin (l. 21) eius:and partly in margin, partly over  
erasure. Et, followed by space.

S. LUC. ix. 44-52.

f. 66 r. a.

- [inma]nus hominum at illi igno-  
 rabant hoc uerbum erat *hautem* co-  
 opertum illis ut *non* intellexerent  
 illud *et* timebant interrogare  
 5 *eum* de hoc uerbo \* intrauit *hautem* in eis  
 cogitatio quis eorum esset ihs *hautem*  
 uidens cogitationes cordis  
 eorum adprehendit puerum *et* sta-  
 tuit secus se *et* ait *quicumque* ac-  
 10 ciperit puerum istum innomine  
 meo me recipit *et* *quicumque* me  
 recipit *non* me recipit *sed* re-  
 cipit eum qui me misit Nam  
 qui minor *est* inter uos hic maior  
 15 [*est*] \* respondit *hautem* iohannis dicens magis  
*ter* uidimus quendam innomine  
 tuo eicientem demonia *et* prohi-  
 buimus eum qui *non* sequitur nobiscum *et*  
 ait ad eum ihs sinite eum *et* noli  
 20 te prohibere qui *enim* *non* *est* aduersus  
 uos pro uobis *est* \* factum *est* *hautem* dum  
*compleretur* dies adsumptionis  
*eius* *et* ipse faciem suam firma-  
 uit ut iret in hierusalem  
 25 *et* misit nuntios ante *conspec-*  
*tum* suum *et* euntes intrauerunt  
 in ciuitatem samaritanorum  
 ut pararent illi cenam



S. Luc. ix. 53-56.

f. 66 r. b.

et non recipiunt eum quia facies eius erat  
 euntis in hierusalem cum uidissent  
 haec discipuli eius iacobus et iohannis et  
 dixerunt domine uis dicemus ut  
 5 ignis discendat de caelo et con-  
 sumat illos et conuersus increpa-  
 uit illos et dixit nescitis d/·<sup>1</sup> et abi

<sup>1</sup> The words [cuius spiritus estis] filius | um perdere sed sanare are supplied in  
 hominis non uenit animas homin- | upper margin.

## NOTES TO CHAPTER V.

p. 77. l. 15. The section in the Amiatine manuscript ends with traderent (l. 14).

p. 77. ll. 27, 28. The punctuation mark, and Et in margin, are probably due to the corrector.

p. 78. l. 5. The second *tur* is not quite certain.

p. 78. l. 7. The erased x appears to be legible. Exurgent is read by  $\tau_2$ , exsurgent by  $\tau_1$  h, insurgent by Q (ms.) R.

p. 78. l. 11. Traces of the final letter of electos remain. The section should have ended with nobis. But ecce *prad.* u. being rejected by the corrector, the mark indicating the close of a section is placed after electos. This appears to confirm the supposition that the corrector and the numerator were the same person.

- p. 78. l. 21. The section ends with *in caelo* (l. 22) in Cod. Am.
- p. 78. l. 34 *sqq.* A hole in the vellum extends from l. 34 to l. 37, and is the cause of the space in the middle of *ianuis*. l. 38.
- p. 79. l. 3. Possibly *et* is a correction from *uel*.
- p. 79. l. 6. The space after *in* is not large enough to have contained *illis*: nor is there any appearance of erasure.
- p. 79. l. 12. Apparently *tur et unus* is written over an erasure. Traces of *et* . . . *r* remain.
- p. 79. l. 23. Some traces of *cum* remain.
- p. 80. l. 36. The space after *suus* is due to a hole in the vellum.
- p. 81. l. 18. The words *ab eo* are followed by the mark ( ; ) indicating the end of the section. Here is a further proof that whoever divided the Gospels into sections revised the text as he went along.
- p. 81. l. 19. *Et* is possibly due to the corrector. If so, *ab eo* (l. 18) may be written in part over the same word erased.
- p. 81. l. 20. There is a mark before *in*, which may possibly be a partially erased letter.
- p. 81. l. 29. *eius* is read by  $r_1 r_2 h$  A etc., and suits the space.
- p. 81. ll. 34-37. A hole in the vellum extends down these lines.
- p. 82. l. 1. *tē* may be read as above, regarding the point above it as a mark of omission; or possibly the line as well as the point is due to the corrector. In this case it should be printed *te*, the symbol  $\nearrow$  being an indication of a marginal note now illegible.
- p. 82. ll. 25, 26. The conjecturally restored reading of the erased words (which exactly fits the space) is that of  $r_1 r_2$  E\*.
- p. 82. l. 26. In A the section begins with the words (l. 25) *Et factum est*.
- p. 82. l. 33. There is a mark above the first letter of *forte*. Possibly something was written here and afterwards erased.
- p. 83. l. 1 *sqq.* A hole in the vellum extends down ll. 1-3.
- p. 83. l. 7. The letters *tis* are plainly a correction. We therefore infer that *habetis* was not the original reading. In the absence of all trace of the original letters I substitute for those of the corrector *bitis* with  $r_2$  (not  $r_1$ ) DELQR *Durma*, etc. Again, it seems clear that the word before *unguentum* cannot have been *hac*. Otherwise this word must have been erased, for no assignable reason, merely to be re-written. This sufficiently disposes of the claim of the reading of the corrector to represent the text as originally written. No trace of the original writing remains. What I have substituted for it suits the space, and is supported by  $r_1 r_2 h$  (*haec enim mittens*).
- p. 83. l. 26. Possibly the original reading was *tradit*, the final *t* being changed into *tur* by the corrector.
- p. 83. l. 32. No trace of the erased words remains. The restored text is supported by  $r_1$  (L) (R\*) etc.  $r_2$  is wanting.
- p. 83. l. 33. I have followed the reading of  $r_1$  L (DQR).
- p. 83. l. 35. The reading as restored is required by the space and supported by  $r_1$  L.
- p. 84. ll. 1 *sqq.* A hole extends from the top of the column to l. 4.
- p. 84. l. 5. No traces of *quia* remain: but there is a space which may have contained it. It is read here in  $r_1 h$  ( $r_2$  is wanting) DEE<sup>ms</sup>LQR.
- p. 84. l. 20. *dixit* is uncertain. The word may have been *dicit* (=  $r_1$  L), perhaps corrected into *dixit*.
- p. 84. l. 28. The space appears to be too small for *iste uerum*: *sed* is the reading of  $r_1$ .
- p. 84. ll. 33, 34. I know of no other authority for the reading *abiit haitem* iterum. But both  $r_1$  and  $r_2$  are unfortunately wanting at this place. The original reading was certainly not *iterum haitem abiit*; for in that case *abiit* would not have been erased, merely to be re-written, and moreover the *abiit* of the corrector, though the letters are spread out, does not nearly occupy the space left by the erasure, *iterum*, if written in full would about fill it. Accordingly I have restored the reading on the analogy of v. 44 as read in  $r_1 f$  (*abiit iterum*). The original reading, however, may have been *abiit haitem secundo*. In any case *haitem* seems to belong to the original writing.

p. 86. ll. 1, 2. *exitum rei*, which is the reading of  $r_1 r_2$  (*ms.*) *h* etc. suits the space. I have sometimes persuaded myself that I could read the erased *e* of *rei*, and *pri* of *principes*. Be that as it may the original reading of the manuscript can scarcely be regarded as doubtful.

p. 86. l. 17. The section ends in *Cod. Am.* at *filius dei* (l. 15).

p. 86. l. 23. In *Cod. Am.* the section ends with *blasphemavit* (see l. 22).

p. 86. l. 26. *in*, which suits the space, is supported apparently by all other MS.

p. 86. l. 30. *uero* may possibly be original.

p. 86. l. 36. The space in the middle of *ancella* is due to a rent in the vellum.

p. 87. l. 11. *mane cum factum esset*, is the reading of *h*;  $r_1$  being here wanting.

p. 87. l. 12. *fecerunt* is the reading of  $Q r_2$ . Traces of the first letter remain.

p. 87. l. 28. Is *hautem* a scribe's blunder for *hoc*?

p. 87. l. 31. *ad* supplied on the authority of  $r_1 h$ . These letters suit the marks which have survived, which, however, would rather have suggested *ex*.

p. 87. l. 34. For *filiis* the correct reading may possibly be *fili*, the final *i* being added as a correction.

p. 88. l. 1. traces of the letters *h* $\bar{s}$  seem to be legible.

p. 88. l. 23. *quid igitur* may be original. A portion of the second *a* in *faciam* remains, transformed into *e*. Possibly *us* | *de* are original.

p. 88. l. 27. It is quite possible that the original reading may have been *nullum*, the second stroke of the first *u* being erased, *ll* being changed into *h*, and *ū* into *il*. But as *nullum* seems otherwise unsupported I have put *nichil* into the text.

p. 89. ll. 9, 10. There can be little doubt that the words enclosed in brackets are correct. They exactly suit the space, and are supported by  $r_1 r_2$ : *eius*, though erased, is distinctly legible, as is also the lower part of the first letter of *faciem*, which has escaped erasure. Thus *in faciem eius* is certain. The space remaining in l. 9 is too small for *et expuentes* ( $\Lambda$  etc.), *et expuebant* (*h* etc.) or *et conspuentes* (*d*), unless the writing projected considerably into the margin, but is quite sufficient for *expuerunt*.

p. 89. l. 10. *et* is most uncertain, but there appears to be room for it after *eius*, and it is required by the sense, and supported by  $h r_1$ .

p. 89. l. 27. Some traces of *ob* remain.

p. 89. l. 30. In very good light the *e* in *crucifixerunt* seems legible.

p. 89. l. 31. *alterum* is the reading of *h*; *aliu*m would suit the space equally well; *unum* ( $= r_1 r_2$ ) and *unus* are both excluded. There are some traces of the erased letters, but I have found it impossible to read them.

p. 89. l. 35. A rent in the vellum causes the space in *reedificabās*.

p. 90. l. 1. The horizontal line over the final letter of the first word is legible. There is some writing above this line, of which only the two letters *su* (above *temet*) are legible.

p. 90. l. 6. That *es* has been altered to *est* is quite evident; *es* would require *descende*, and the *t* in *descendat* has all the appearance of being inserted; but a shows little trace of being due to the corrector. It exhibits, however, signs of compression as if to make room for the following *t*.

p. 90. l. 7. *ei* looks as if it had been written by the corrector. Perhaps it replaced *si*, *h* reads *cred*, *ei si confidet*.

p. 90. l. 8. *eum dixit*: so  $h_1 r_2$ . The section begins with *id* (l. 9) in *A*.

p. 90. l. 9. The two last letters of *crucifixi* are perhaps due to the corrector.

p. 90. l. 13. *autem* is read by *h*.

p. 90. l. 21. The section ends with *eum* (l. 23) in *A*.

p. 90. l. 22. *sinete*: so *d* (*hiat*  $r_1$ ). Parts of the letters *et* remain.

p. 90. l. 25. *ih̄s* is made prominent by the corrector, as if to mark the beginning of a section, but there is no numeral in the margin.

p. 91. l. 8. The reading may have been *hautem sero* ( $h r_1 r_2$ ).

p. 91. l. 12. The section begins in the next line (*et*) in *Am*.

p. 91. l. 33. *et signauerunt* suits the space, and is supported by  $h r_2$  (*hiat*  $r_1$ ).

p. 98. l. 30. *hoc uiso simon* suits the space, which is not sufficient for the reading of the corrector. It is taken from *a*. In  $r_1$  we find *quod cum uidisset simon*, which may have been written in our manuscript. But if so it must have projected into the margin.

p. 100. l. 1. Slight traces of *Et* remain in the MS. The word is distinctly legible in a photograph of the page.

- p. 100. l. 10. Opposite this line in left margin is the letter s.
- p. 101. l. 19. The space of the erasure is too great to have contained only r. *et* is therefore inserted with A  $r_1$  etc.
- p. 103. l. 3. In A the section ends with sacerdotibus (l. 2). Our numerator makes its close coincide with that of the paragraph in his manuscript.
- p. 103. l. 4. The section begins a verse earlier (l. 2 *et dixit*) in A.
- p. 103. l. 24. oilare (*sic*): a slip of the pen, not very difficult to explain, for orare.
- p. 104. ll. 1-3. The letters enclosed in brackets are for the most part torn away.
- p. 104. l. 6. *et dis* is erased and re-written in large character as if for the beginning of a section, but there is no number in the margin.
- p. 104. l. 30. uerum is retouched as if for beginning of section, but no number appears in the margin.
- p. 105. l. 3. In A the section begins two lines further back (*nae uobis qui saturati*).
- p. 105. l. 19. Probably diligentes is correct: but it may be diligentes (the second i perhaps altered into e).
- p. 105. l. 29. The word (of two or three letters) erased at the beginning of the line cannot have been *nihil*, though this would suit the space; for there is no reason why this word should have been erased and re-written by the corrector. On the other hand a very slight mark remaining before d looks like the upper part of c. Hence the conjectural restoration, *ne*. Perhaps, however, we may read non or ne; or again in, *i.e.* inde sperantes, though the space is more than sufficient for this. Whatever may have been the erased word there appears to be no other authority for the reading as originally written.
- p. 106. l. 7. Possibly the mark over coagitatam may indicate omission, or at least doubt. The word is not found in  $r_1$ .
- p. 106. l. 10. The second e of *remetietur* may have been corrected from i.
- p. 106. l. 14. Possibly a word is erased in left margin before discipulus.
- p. 106. l. 15. Apparently traces of q in *quid* remain.
- p. 106. l. 17. The u in *oculo* has been corrected from some other letter.
- p. 107. ll. 1, 2. The greater number of the letters enclosed in brackets are torn away.
- p. 109. On the extreme edge of this page above the second column there is some writing partly torn away, of which a few letters appear to be legible—*incipit nim. r*  
... m ...
- p. 109. l. 13. There appear to be marks over the two last words, thus: *alium ex*.
- p. 109. l. 25. Perhaps *scandalizatus*.
- p. 109. l. 33. A space is left after *domibus* sufficient to have contained *regum*.
- p. 110. l. 8. The space between *ens* and *public* is sufficient for *et*. A crease in the vellum makes the word illegible.
- p. 113. ll. 27, 28. The words *ab illo*, written in the right margin opposite l. 27, are regarded above as having been penned by the corrector. It would be natural to conclude that these words were originally written at the beginning of l. 28. The space of the erasure there seems however too small to have contained *ab illo* u. Hence the conjectural reading *ab eo*, which is supported by  $r_1$ . Some traces of the erased letters remain, which appear to be of the e of *eo*, and the first letter of *uenerunt*, the latter being indeed quite certain.
- p. 115. l. 11. *sic*: *respon* (*i.e.* *respondens* or *respondit*) deleted.
- p. 116. l. 1. Traces of s remain.
- p. 116. l. 13. The space in the middle of *narra* is caused by a hole in the vellum.
- p. 117. l. 3. *ob sic*.
- p. 117. l. 26. *uerbum* = *uerb*, the horizontal stroke being perhaps not original.
- p. 119. l. 13. Space after *su* due to hole in vellum.
- p. 122. l. 16. *tria* is badly written. It might be read *trai*.
- p. 125. l. 1. *non* might be read *hæc* the form of the n approaching very closely here, as occasionally elsewhere, to that of h.
- p. 125. l. 7. d = *desunt* (cf. Abbott's *Evangeliorum Vers. Antch.* pp. 645, 699). It refers to the words written in the upper margin. The position of this symbol as part of the original writing proves that the omission of the words which follow *nescitis* in the Vulgate text is not solely due to the carelessness of our scribe. See above p. 68 sq. In restoring the illegible words of the marginal reading I have followed the Codex Amiatinus. The first three words may have been (as in  $r_1$ ) *quali spiritu estis*.

## CHAPTER VI.

## AFFINITIES OF THE IRISH OLD LATIN TEXT.

IF the reasoning of our fourth chapter has conducted us to a correct conclusion, we have in our hands three copies<sup>1</sup> more or less complete of the Irish Old Latin recension of the last five chapters of St Matthew, and two for six chapters of St Luke. With their help we may now enter upon a further stage of our inquiry. Our object is to discover the affinities of the Irish Old Latin text. It is generally agreed that it belongs in the main to the European family, of which the Codex Veronensis (*b*) is the typical representative. We shall make the attempt to discover whether there are any variations from that type, and to what extent these are derived from the Italian or African recensions.

§ 1. *Binary Combinations (St Matthew).*

For the Matthean fragment we have three witnesses— $\mu$   $r_1$   $r_2$ —and our task will here perhaps be most thoroughly and easily performed by giving in the first place a list of the readings in which at least two of these mss. are in agreement against the Vulgate, omitting those which are found in *b*.<sup>2</sup> With these we have noted the principal mss. of the pre-hieronymian text in which they are found. We confine ourselves to the Codex Brixianus (*f*) for the Italian family, to the Codex Palatinus (*e*) and Cyprian's quotations for the African (Codex Bobiensis (*k*) not being available), and to the Vercelli manuscript (*a*) and Codex Bezae (*l*) as representing other ancient types of text. The references for the Cyprianic readings are to the pages of Hartel's edition in the Vienna *Corpus*.

I. *Readings in which at least two of the three MSS.  $\mu$   $r_1$   $r_2$  agree.*

Matt. xxiv. 12.  $r_1$   $r_2$  (*ms.*) quia pro quoniam = *d*.

\*  $\mu$   $r_2$  iniquitas et ref.

14.<sup>3</sup>  $\mu$   $r_1$   $r_2$  per totum orbem = *e* (+ terrarum) Cyp. i. 335 (+ terrae).

<sup>1</sup> One of these, an extract from "the Garland of Howth" ( $r_2$ ), is printed in the Appendix to this volume.

<sup>2</sup> The number of variants recorded in the following list is over 200: it would have been about 350 had those been included which are supported by *b*.

<sup>3</sup> The text of this verse is of peculiar interest. St Patrick, in his Confession (Whitley Stokes, *Tripartite Life*, ii. p. 369), quotes St Matt. xxiv. 14 as follows: "Predicabitur hoc euangelium regi in universo mundo in testimonium omnibus gentibus; et tunc veniet finis." And elsewhere (p. 367) he says that our Lord had foretold that His Gospel would be preached "in testimonium omnibus genti-

- Matt. xxiv. 15.  $\mu r_2$  (*hiat*  $r_1$ ) per danielum profetam (-tum  $r_2$ ) =  $d$  ( $e$ ) Cyp. i. 335.  
 16.  $\mu r_1$  in montes;  $r_2$  in montibus =  $a b d e$ .  $f$  ad montes.  
 17.  $\mu r_1 r_2$  in tecto sunt.  
 $\mu r_1 r_2$  descendant (-dent  $\mu$ ).  
 18.  $\mu r_1$  in agro erit;  $r_2$  in agro sunt.  $e f$  Cyp. i. 335 in agro est.  
 23.  $r_1$  aut ecce illic;  $r_2$  ecce illic:  $r_1 = a$  Cyp. i. 336,  $r_2 = b e$ .  
 24.  $\mu r_1$  (*hiat*  $r_2$ ) exsurgent =  $a d f$ .  
 27.  $\mu r_1$  usque ad =  $e f$  Cyp. i. 336.  
 $\mu r_2$  (*hiat*  $r_1$ ) erit aduentus =  $a d$ .  
 30.  $\mu r_1 r_2$  apparebit =  $e f$  Cyp. i. 336.  
 $r_1$  lamentabun[t . . .];  $r_2$  lamentabunt se .  $e$  lamentabuntur;  
 $e$  vel  $r_2 =$  Cyp. i. 336.  
 31.  $\mu r_1 r_2$  (*ms.*) quattuor angulis uentorum .  $b$  quat. angulos caeli.  
 $\mu r_1 r_2$  ad fin + cum coeperint autem (*om.* autem  $\mu$ ) haec fieri  
 respicite et leuate caput quoniam (quia  $r_1$ ) adpropriet re-  
 demptio uestra =  $b$  (capita uestra)  $d$  (incipientibus . . . his  
 . . . capita uestra quia).  
 32.  $\mu r_2$  (*hiat*  $r_1$ ) cognoscitis (-cetis  $\mu$ ) pro scitis =  $d e$  (-cite).  
 $\mu r_2$  (*hiat*  $r_1$ ) prope esse aestatem (aestas  $\mu$ ).  
 33.  $\mu r_2$  (*hiat*  $r_1$ ) sic pro ita.  
 $\mu r_2$  (*hiat*  $r_1$ ) quoniam pro quia =  $d e$ .  
 $\mu r_1$  (? *ms.*)  $r_2$  prope est ianuus.  
 35.  $\mu r_1 r_2$  (*ms.*) autem pro uero =  $a d e f$ .  
 37.  $\mu r_1 r_2$  (*ms.*) enim pro autem =  $d e$ .  
 38.  $\mu r_2$  manducabant;  $r_1$  manducantes:  $\mu r_2 = a$ ;  $r_1 = b d e f$ .  
 $\mu r_2$  bibebant =  $a$ .  
 $\mu r_1 r_2$  et (*om.*  $r_1$ ) nubebant.  
 $\mu r_1 r_2$  uxores ducebant =  $a$ .  
 $\mu r_1$  (? *ms.*)  $r_2$  usque in =  $a d f$ .  
 $\mu r_2$  *om.* eum =  $f$ .  
 $\mu r_1 r_2$  noe in arcam =  $d f$ .  
 39.  $\mu r_1 r_2$  non senserunt.  
 40.  $\mu r_1 r_2$  erunt duo.  
 $\mu r_1$  alter relinquetur;  $r_2$  alius rel.  
 42.  $\mu r_1 r_2$  qua die uel (+ qua  $\mu$ ) hora .  $e$  qua hora aut qua die.  
 45.  $r_1 r_2$  *om.* suus =  $a d e$ .  
 $\mu r_2$  super =  $a d e$ .  
 49.  $\mu r_2$  consernos suos percutere.  
 $\mu r_1 r_2$  ebriosis =  $d f$ .  
 51.  $\mu r_1$  cum infidelibus.  
 xxv. 1.  $r_1 r_2$  similabitur =  $d$ .  
 $\mu r_1 r_2$  prodierunt  
 2.  $r_1$  (? *ms.*)  $r_2$  sapientes =  $d$ .  
 3.  $\mu r_2$  (*hiat*  $r_1$ ) fatuae autem .  $d$  stultae ergo.  
 4.  $r_1 r_2$  sapientes =  $d$ .  
 $r_1 r_2$  (*ms.*) autem pro uero =  $d$ .  
 $r_1 r_2$  *om.* suis.  
 9.  $\mu r_2$  et (*om.*  $r_2$ ) dixerunt.  
 $\mu r_1 r_2$  ad eos qui uendunt.  
 $\mu r_1 r_2$  emite nobis oleum.  
 11.  $\mu r_1$  (*c spat.*)  $r_2$  postea pro nouissime =  $f$ .  
 $\mu r_2$  (*hiat*  $r_1$  [*ms.*]) uenerunt (-iarunt  $r_2$ ) =  $d f$ .  
 12.  $\mu r_2$  (*ms.*) (*hiat*  $r_1$ ) uobis + quia =  $f$ .  
 14.  $r_1 r_2$  substantiam suam =  $d f$ .  
 15.  $\mu r_1 r_2$  + quidem ante dedit =  $d$ .

bus ante finem mundi." These two passages suffice to show that St Patrick read the last word of the verse as it is found in  $r_2 d f g \delta$  Cyp. i. 335, though  $\mu r_1$  agree in this case with the Vulgate. In the earlier part of the verse, on the other hand, his reading agrees with the Vulgate against the unanimous testimony of our three manuscripts, which have there adopted the African "per totum orbem" of Cyp. i. 335. This is the only passage within the limits of our fragments quoted by St Patrick.

- Matt. xxv. 16.  $\mu r_1 r_2$  autem abiit (abhiis  $r_2$ )= $f$ .  
 17.  $\mu r_1$  similiter autem.  
 $\mu r_1 r_2$  et qui= $a d f$ .  
 19. \* $\mu r_2$  om. uero.  
 $\mu r_1 r_2$  tempus= $d f$ .  
 $\mu r_1$  illorum seruorum.  
 20. \* $\mu r_2$  om. et pri.  
 $\mu r_1 r_2$  accessit . . et.  
 $\mu r_1 r_2$  (ms.) om. talenta sec.  
 $r_1 r_2$  lueratus.  
 21.  $\mu r_1 r_2$  serue bone= $d f$ .  
 $\mu r_1 r_2$  fidelis fuisti.  
 23.  $\mu r_1$  dominus suus= $d$ . [ $r_2$  om. vv. 22, 23.]  
 $\mu r_1$  fidelis fuisti.  
 24.  $\mu r_1$  colligis.  
 25. \* $\mu r_1 r_2$  timui ergo (enim  $\mu$ ) et.  
 26.  $r_1 r_2$  serue nequam= $a$  (nequa) .  $d$  nequa serue.  
 $\mu r_1 r_2$  colligo= $f$ .  
 27.  $\mu r_1$  te dare pecuniam ;  $r_2$  uenundari pecuniam.  
 $\mu r_1 r_2$  ego ueniens.  
 29. \* $r_1 r_2$  om. autem.  
 $\mu r_1$  etiam quod ;  $r_2$  quod . . etiam.  
 34.  $\mu r_2$  regnum quod uobis paratum est=Cyp. i. 391, 430<sup>1</sup> . Cyp. i. 100, 112, quod uobis paratum est regnum.  
 35.  $r_1 r_2$  suscepistis pro collexistis.  
 36.  $\mu r_1 r_2$  carcere (-rem  $r_2$ ) fui= $d f$  Cyp. i. 100, 112, 181, 391, 700.  
 $a b$  carcerem eram.  
 37.  $\mu r_1 r_2$  aut sitientem= $d f$ .  
 $\mu r_1$  potauimus te ;  $r_2$  pauimus te .  $d f$  Cyp. i. 100, 112, 391, potauimus.  
 38. \* $r_1 r_2$  + aut ad init.  
 $\mu r_1 r_2$  suscepimus (suscip.  $\mu r_2$ )= $a$ .  
 39.  $\mu r_1 r_2$  uel pro aut.  
 40.  $\mu r_1 r_2$  ex pro de=Cyp. i. 100, 112, 392.  
 $\mu r_1 r_2$  om. his.  
 41.  $\mu r_1 r_2$  quem praeeparauit (par.  $r_1$ ) pater meus= $d$  (quod)  
 Cyp. i. 100 (L) :  $r_1$ = $a$  (quod)  $b$  Cyp. i. 100 (Hartel), 112, 392.  
 42.  $r_1 r_2$  bibere ([ . . . ]e  $r_1$ ).<sup>2</sup>  
 43.  $r_1 r_2$  suscepistis= $f$ .  
 $r_1 r_2$  cooperuistis= $f$ .  
 44.  $\mu r_1$  (ms.)  $r_2$  respond. + ei= $f$ .  
 45. \* $r_1 r_2$  respondet (respōn  $\mu$ ).  
 $\mu r_1 r_2$  eis= $d$ .  
 $r_1 r_2$  minimis= $a$  Cyp. i. 101, 112, 392 .  $d$  minimorum.  
 46.  $\mu r_1 r_2$  et tunc ibunt (om. et  $\mu$ ).  
 $\mu$  isti pro hi ;  $r_1$  [ . . ]s[t]i (? ms.) ;  $r_2$  iniusti :  $\mu$ =Cyp. i. 101, 112, 392.  
 xxvi. 1.  $\mu r_1 r_2$  omnia uerba haec.  
 3. \* $\mu r_1 r_2$  (ms.) uocabatur.  
 8.  $\mu r_2$  quod (qui  $\mu$ ) eum uidissent.  
 9.  $r_1$  hoc pro istud ;  $r_2$  haec (ms.) :  $r_1$ = $d$ .  
 $\mu$  pretioso multo ;  $r_1$  praetio ;  $r_2$  praetio magna :  $r_1$ = $a b$  .  $f$  multo praetio.  
 10. \* $\mu r_1 r_2$  bonum opus.  
 12. \* $\mu r_1 r_2$  ecce enim mittens.  
 $\mu r_1 r_2$  om. haec.  
 19.  $\mu r_1$  eis= $a d$ . [hiat  $r_2$  usque v. 45.]  
 21.  $\mu r_1$  manducantibus= $a d$ .  
 23.  $\mu r_1$  dixit= $a d$ .

<sup>1</sup> So also Lebar Brecc, p. 450. See Bernard in *Trans. of R.I.A.*, xxx. p. 323.

<sup>2</sup> So Lebar Brecc, p. 418, *Trans. R.I.A.*, xxx. 323.

- Matt. xxvi. 24. \* $\mu r_1$  non nasci homini illi .  $b$  homini illi non nasci.  
 25.  $\mu r_1$  traditurus eum erat .  $a b f$  traditurus erat eum.  
 26.  $\mu r_1$  ipsis autem manducantibus= $d$ .  $a b$  ipsis autem cenantibus.  
      $\mu r_1$  dicens *pro* et ait= $f$ .  
 29.  $\mu r_1$  uobis + quia= $f$ .  
 34. \* $\mu r_1$  quoniam.  
 35.  $\mu r_1$  dicit= $d$ .  
 36.  $\mu r_1$  cum illis iesus .  $f$  cum eis iesus.  
      $\mu r_1$  agrum qui= $d$ .  
 38.  $\mu r_1$  dicit= $d$ .  
 45.  $r_1 r_2$  (*ms.*) ait= $f$ .  
 47.  $\mu$  plurima multitudo ;  $r_1$  plurima turba.  
 50.  $\mu r_1 r_2$  cui dixit.  
     \* $\mu r_2$  uenisti fac.  
 51.  $r_1 r_2$  absceidit.  
 53.  $r_1 r_2$  putatis= $f$ .  
      $r_1$  non posse me ;  $r_2$  non . . possum me .  $a b$  non . . . posse me.  
     \* $r_1 r_2$  exhiberet ;  $\mu$  exhibet.  
 55.  $\mu r_1 r_2$  ad turbas .  $a$  ad turbam.  
     \* $r_1 r_2$  eram *pro* sedebam.  
      $r_1 r_2$  tenuistis me= $a d$ .  
 56. \* $\mu r_2$  inpleretur.  
      $\mu r_1 r_2$  discipuli eius= $a$ .  
 57.  $\mu r_1 r_2$  illi autem= $d$ .  
     \* $\mu r_1 r_2$  perduxerunt.  
 58.  $\mu r_1 r_2$  intus= $d$ .  
      $\mu r_1 r_2$  (*ms.*) exitum rei *pro* finem= $a$  .  $b d f$  finem rei.  
 59.  $\mu r_1 r_2$  aduersus= $a d f$ .  
 60.  $\mu r_1 r_2$  inuenerunt in eum (eo  $\mu$ ) quicquam (quicquam  $r_2$ ) .  $d$  inuenerunt sequentia.  
     \* $r_1 r_2$  *om.* cum . . . accessissent.  
 61. \* $r_1$  (?)  $r_2$  dei hoc ;  $\mu$  hoc dei :  $\mu=b d$ .  
 63.  $\mu r_1$  dixit *pro* ait= $a d$ .  
 64.  $\mu r_1 r_2$  + et *ad init.*  
      $r_1 r_2$  dixit.  
 65. \* $\mu$  (*hiat*  $r_1$ ) opus est *pro* egemus ;  $r_2$  opus uobis .  $d$  opus habemus.  
 69.  $\mu r_1 r_2$  petrus autem.  
      $\mu r_1$  ex (de  $r_1$ ) ancillis= $f$ .  
      $\mu r_1 r_2$  dixit ([ . . . ]t  $r_1$ ).  
 71.  $\mu$  illis *pro* his ;  $r_1 r_2$  eis :  $\mu=a$  (illi).  
 72.  $\mu$  dixit quia ;  $r_1$  dicens quia ;  $r_2$  dicens :  $r_1=f$  ;  $r_2=b$ .  
 74.  $\mu r_1$  statim.  
 75.  $\mu r_2$  (*hiat*  $r_1$ ) amarissime fleuit .  $f$  fleuit amare ;  $b$  amarissime plorauit.
- xxvii. 1.  $\mu r_2$  (*hiat*  $r_1$ ) fecerunt *pro* iuerunt= $a f$ .  
 2.  $\mu r_1$  eum adduxerunt .  $a d$  eum duxerunt.  
 3.  $\mu r_1$  quoniam *pro* quod ;  $r_2$  quia :  $\mu r_1=d$  ;  $r_2=a b f$ .  
 5.  $\mu r_1$  (*e spat. ms.*) *om.* abiens.  
 6.  $\mu r_1$  eos mittere= $f$ .  
     \* $\mu r_2$  corb. hoc est in oblationem (locum  $r_2$ ) .  $b$  loculum.  
      $\mu r_1$  autem facto.  
 8.  $\mu r_1$  cognominatus est.  
 9.  $\mu r_1$  adimpletum= $f$ .  
      $\mu r_2$  (*hiat*  $r_1$ ) *om.*  $a=f$ .  
 13.  $\mu r_1$  ei.  
      $\mu r_1$  testificantur= $f$  .  $d$  testantur.  
 14. \* $\mu r_1$  multum *pro* uehementer.  
 15. \* $\mu r_2$  *om.* autem.  
     \* $\mu r_1$  consuetudo erat.  
 17.  $\mu r_1$  uobis dimittam= $d$ .  
      $r_1 r_2$  (*ms.*) aut *pro* an= $d$ .  
 18.  $\mu r_1 r_2$  (*ms.*) tradiderunt= $f$  .  $a b d$  tradiderant.



- Matt. xxvii. 19.  $\mu r_2$  eum *pro* illum = *a d.*  
 20.  $\mu r_1 r_2$  (*ms.*) autem *pro* uero = *d.*  
 21.  $\mu r_1 r_2$  de duobis dimittam uobis (*u. dim. r\_1*) = *d. f* ex *d. dim.*  
     uobis; *b* de duobus uobis dimittam; *a* uobis de du. mit-  
     tam.  
 24.  $\mu r_1 r_2$  (*ms.*) manus suas = *d.*  
 25.  $\mu r_1$  huius *pro* eius = *d f.*  
 26.  $\mu r_1$  eum crucifigerent . *a b* cruci eum figerent; *d* crucifigerent  
     eum.  
 27. \* $\mu r_1 r_2$  duxerunt . . . et *pro* suscipientes.  
      $\mu r_2$  (*hiat r\_1*) praetorium = *d.*  
 28. \* $\mu r_1$  (*c spat.*)  $r_2$  uestiarunt eum (*om. eum r\_2* tunicam pur-  
     puream et. *a b f* induerunt eum (*om. eum b*) tunicam pur-  
     puream et; *d* vestientes eum tunicam purpuream.  
 30. \* $\mu r_1 r_2$  expuerunt . . . et (*om. et r\_2*) . *a* expuebant . . . et.  
 31. \* $\mu r_2$  *om. et sec.*  
 32. \* $\mu r_1$  cirinensem ([*c*]yr.  $r_1$ ).  
     \* $\mu r_1 r_2$  uenientem obuam illi (*sibi r\_2*) .  $r_2$  = *a*; *b d* obuam sibi  
     uenientem.  
 35. \* $\mu r_2$  *om. autem.*  
 38.  $\mu r_1 r_2$  crucifixiuerunt . *f* crucifixissent.  
      $\mu r_1 r_2$  duos = *f.*  
      $\mu r_2$  (*hiat r\_1*) unum *pro* unus *pri.* = *f.*  
      $r_1 r_2$  unum *pro* unus *sec.* = *f.*  
 40.  $\mu r_1$  saluum fac.  
 41.  $r_1$  [*eu*]m cum;  $r_2$  eum :  $r_1$  = *f.*  
 43.  $\mu r_2$  filius dei.  
 44. \* $r_1 r_2$  crucifixierant (*-runt r\_2*).  
 45.  $\mu r_1$  ab ora autem sexta = *d* . *a* ab hora sexta.  
      $r_1$  usque in;  $r_2$  in :  $r_1$  = *a* Cyp. i. 91.  
 46.  $\mu r_1$  (? *ms.*) *om. meus pri.*  
 49.  $\mu r_1$  si uenit = *a d f* :  $r_2$  si ueniat; *b* si ueniet.  
      $\mu$  et saluet;  $r_1$  et saluabit.  
     \* $\mu r_2$  + *ad fin. vers.* alius hautem accipit lanciam et (accepta lancia  
      $r_2$ ) pupungit latus eius et exiit (exit  $\mu$ ) aqua et sanguis.  
 50. \* $\mu r_1$  exclamauit . . . et;  $r_2$  exclamans.  
 54. \* $\mu r_1 r_2$  cum uidissent terrae motum . *d* uidentes t. m.  
      $\mu r_1 r_2$  ea *pro* his = *a (sic).*  
 55.  $\mu r_1 r_2$  fuerant *pro* erant *sec* = *a.*  
      $\mu r_1 r_2$  illi *pro* ei.  
 57.  $r_1 r_2$  autem sero = *f.*  
 58.  $\mu r_1 r_2$  dari *pro* reddi = *f.*  
 59.  $\mu r_1$  cum accepisset ioseph corpus = *a.* [*hiat r\_2 usque fin. ev.*]  
 60.  $\mu r_1$  discessit (-et  $\mu$ ) *pro* abiit.  
 65.  $\mu r_1$  milites *pro* custodiam.  
 66.  $\mu r_1$  et signauerunt.

Most of these readings may fairly claim to have found place in the Irish recension of the Old Latin, and about one-fifth of them have no other pre-hieronymian attestation so far as I have been able to discover. These I have marked with asterisks. Some few of them may seem to suggest that the Irish Old Latin recension was based to some extent on a study of the original Greek. Such are the omission (supported by the Greek cursives 24\*, 39, 180, 198, etc.) of a part of xxvi. 60, and the narrative of the piercing of the Saviour's side, found in the uncials  $\aleph$  B C L I' U and some cursives and versions at xxvii. 49. But M. Berger's caution (*L'Histoire* p. 34) on this subject must not be forgotten.

Among the remainder, Dr Sanday's remarks on the St Gall frag-

ment (*p*)<sup>1</sup> lead us to expect to find some of Italian origin. In the search for these we are indeed confined to a somewhat restricted area. The Italian origin of a reading cannot be proved, though it may be sometimes very probable, in the absence of opposing African testimony. Now, for the entire extent of our Matthew fragment the Codex Bobien-sis (*h*) is wanting, the Codex Palatinus (*e*) is available only for xxiv. 12-49, xxviii. 2 *sqq.*, Cyprian's citations for xxiv. 12-31, xxv. 31-46, xxvi. 28, 29, 39, xxvii. 3, 4, 45. Or, in other words, African evidence is forthcoming only for about one-quarter of the fragment. Keeping within the limits of these passages, a few readings, supported by *f* alone among the group *a b c f* Cyp., may be classed under this head. Upon several of them, indeed, no stress can be laid: but the more significant are xxiv. 38 *usque in diem . . . noe in arcam*, xxv. 43 *suscipistis . . . cooperuistis*.

Far more important is the African element, of which no instances were brought to light by Dr Sanday's comparison of *p* with *r*<sub>1</sub>. African readings are found in our passages from St Matthew at the following places: xxiv. 14, *per totum orbem*; xxiv. 15, *per danielum profetam*; xxiv. 30, *lamentabuntur*, or *lamentabant se*; xxiv. 32, *cognoscitis*; xxiv. 42, *qua die uel (qua) hora*; xxv. 34, *regnum quod uobis paratum est*; xxv. 46, *isti*; and perhaps also at xxv. 40, *ec.* We may be allowed also to add xxiv. 31, *a quattuor angulis uentorum*, and xxiv. 51, *cum infidelibus*, supported by *m* alone among old Latin authorities, and xxiv. 39, *senserunt*, found elsewhere in *h m* only. We shall perhaps not be wrong in concluding that African influences played a larger part in shaping the Irish text of St Matthew's Gospel than Italian.

When, still keeping within the same limits, we come to look for coincidences with *d*, which appear so strikingly in *p*, disappointment awaits us. Three only, and those of little importance, are found: xxiv. 12, *quia*; xxv. 45, *eis*; xxvii. 45, *ab ora autem sexta*.

What, now, is the significance of these coincidences of reading? Are we to infer direct literary contact with the African and Italian texts and the text represented by *d*? By no means. M. Berger has remarked the resemblance of the text of the Codex Claromontanus (*h*) to that of *r*<sub>1</sub>. Of the 350 variants in our passage of St Matthew in which two of the three MSS.  $\mu$  *r*<sub>1</sub> *r*<sub>2</sub> are together, it supports them in about 230, or in two-thirds of the entire number. Among the readings attested by it are both those which we have classed as Italian (one however only partially), the three in which it coincides with *d*, and seven of the eleven which we regard as African. The thought is thus suggested that the Irish recension may not be in the strictest sense indigenous. The version upon which it was founded, and from which its African, Italian, and *d* elements were derived, may have been imported from the region which gave birth to the text represented by *h*. If the provenance of *h* can be fixed, we shall

<sup>1</sup> *Old Latin Biblical Texts*, ii. p. ccvi *sqq.*

perhaps have advanced one step towards ascertaining the local origin of the Irish Old Latin text.

§ 2. *Individual readings of  $\mu$ ,  $r_1$ ,  $r_2$  in St Matthew.*

I now proceed to give a list of the individualisms of  $\mu$ —variants, that is, in which it stands apart from both  $r_1$  and  $r_2$ . For the sake of completeness, I include those which appear to be mere scribe's errors, marking them, however, with an obelus. Opposite each reading is given a list of its supporters among the Old Latin MSS. *a b c d e f g h i j k l m n o p q r s t u v x y z*. Where  $r_1$  or  $r_2$  gives a rival variant, I have recorded it with its Old Latin supporters. In all cases where this is not done,  $r_1$  and  $r_2$  agree with, or at least support, the Amiatine text.

II. *Readings in which  $\mu$  stands alone.*

- Matt. xxiv. 13. permanserit = *b c q . a remanserit.*  
 15. hautem *pro* ergo (*hiat*  $r_1$ ).  
 24. inducant = *c f h.*  
       electos = *c d f g h i.*  
 26. credere *pro* exire (*hiat*  $r_1$ ) = *c f i (sed et exire pro credere) . r\_2 om.*  
       exire usque nolite . *b om.* nolite exire.  
 29. [et] statim hautem.  
       eorum *pro* illorum.  
       corum *pro* caelorum.  
 30. plangent se = *a c m q . r\_1* lamentabun[t . .] ;  $r_2$  lamentabunt se  
       —*vide sup.*  
 31. a summo.  
 35. transibunt *pro* praeteribunt = *d* (transient) *e* (transient).  
 41. *om.* molentes .  $r_1$  *om.* in mola = *a.*  
 †unus (*bis*) = *q.*  
 43. fur uenisset (*hiat*  $r_1$ ) .  $r_2$  fur ueniet . *a b c f h q* fur uenit . *d e*  $\delta$   
       fur ueniret.  
 45. *om.* quis putas est .  $r_1$   $r_2$  quisquam est = *a b c f g h i m . d q* quis  
       enim est.  
 xxv. 1. *om.* et sponsae (*hiat*  $r_1$ ) =  $\delta$ .  
       †nobis *pro* uobis *sec.*  
 15. talio (*bis*).  
 18. †habens *pro* abiens .  $r_1$   $r_2$  *om.* abiens = *a b c d f g i.*  
 20. tradidisti mihi .  $r_1$  mihi dedisti = *b f i q.*  
 21. †at *pro* ait.  
       dominus suus (*hiat*  $r_1$ ) = *d f i h.*  
       *om.* in. (*hiat*  $r_1$ ).  
 22. *om.* autem (*hiat*  $r_1$ ).  
       acceperat + similiter.  
       dixit = *d f.*  
       mihi tradidisti = *d g i h*  $\delta$  .  $r_1$  mihi dedisti = *f i q.*  
       †talio.  
       superlucratu (*hiat*  $r_1$ ) = *d f.*  
 23. serue bone = *b c d f g i q*  $\delta$ .  
       *om.* in.  
       *om.* tui.  
 26. †mala .  $r_1$   $r_2$  nequam (*vide sup.*).  
       *om.* et pri.  
       †metuo.  
 29. *om.* ab eo (*hiat*  $r_1$ ).

- Matt. xxv. 30. seruum nequam .  $r_1 r_2$  nequam seruum =  $a b c h q$ .  
 32. om. eos.  
 quemadmodum *pro* sicut = Cyp. i. 100, 112, 391.  
 separat pastor .  $\delta$  pastor separat vel segregat.  
 33. quidem oues =  $\delta$  .  $r_1$  om. quidem =  $b c d f \text{ff}_1 h$  Cyp. i. 100, 112, 391.  
 34. percipite *pro* possidete = Cyp. i. 100, 112, 391, 430.  
 ab initio *pro* a constitutione .  $r_2$  ab origine =  $c d \text{ff}_1 \delta$  Cyp. i. 100, 112, 391, 430.<sup>1</sup>  
 38. om. autem =  $\delta$  Cyp. i. 100, 112, 391 .  $r_1$  aut *pro* quando autem te uidimus.  
 40. †respondit (*hiat*  $r_1$ ).  
 43. nudus eram (*hiat*  $r_1$ ) =  $h$  .  $r_2$  nudus fui = Cyp. i. 112.  
 carere fui.<sup>2</sup>  
 xxvi. 6. iesus esset =  $\text{ff}_1$ .  
 7. accedens.  
 9. om. istud .  $r_1$  [h]oc =  $d$  ;  $r_2$  haec (ms.) =  $h$ .  
 13. ut ubicumque.  
 21. me traditur *pro* traditurus est me (*hiat*  $r_2$ ) .  $r_1$  tradet me =  $a d h \delta$ .  
 22. contristati sunt (*hiat*  $r_2$ ).  
 24. + et ad init. (*hiant*  $r_1 r_2$ ) =  $c q$ .  
 tradetur *pro* uadit (*hiat*  $r_2$ ) .  $r_1$  uadet.  
 om. de illo (*hiat*  $r_2$ ) .  $r_1$  [de] eo =  $a d f q$ .  
 26. om. et *pri* (*hiat*  $r_2$ ).  
 et *pro* ac (*hiat*  $r_2$ ) =  $c h$ .  
 et dedit (*hiant*  $r_1 r_2$ ) =  $a c f q \delta$ .  
 29. diem illum cum illud (*hiat*  $r_2$ ) =  $b c f \text{ff}_1 h$  (illum diem)  $q$  .  $r_1$  illud diem cum illud.  
 32. †om. postquam autem (*hiant*  $r_1 r_2$ ).  
 33. dixit (*hiat*  $r_2$ ) =  $a c d h$  .  $\delta$  ait uel dixit.  
 om. illi (*hiant*  $r_1 r_2$ ) =  $b c$ .  
 si *pro* etsi (*hiant*  $r_1 r_2$ ) =  $a b c d q \delta$ .  
 ego enim nunquam (*hiat*  $r_2$ ) .  $h$  ego autem numquam.  
 35. si *pro* etiamsi (*hiat*  $r_2$ ).  
 38. + iesus ante tristis (*hiant*  $r_1 r_2$ ) =  $a f h \delta$ .  
 39. cecidit (*hiat*  $r_2$ ) =  $d$ .  
 quod *pro* sicut (*bis*) (*hiat*  $r_2$ ) = Cyp. i. 133.  
 40. discipulos suos (*hiat*  $r_2$ ) =  $a b c d f \text{ff}_1 g_1 h q$ .  
 dixit (*hiat*  $r_2$ ) =  $a g_1$  .  $r_1$  ait =  $b c f q$ .  
 42. abiit haute iterum (*hiant*  $r_1 r_2$ ).  
 om. si (*hiat*  $r_2$ ) =  $a h$ .  
 om. hic (*hiat*  $r_2$ ).  
 transire a me (*hiat*  $r_2$  ;  $r_1$  [? ms.] =  $\Lambda$ ) =  $f q \delta$ .  
 om. tua (*hiat*  $r_2$ ).  
 43. om. et *pri* (*hiat*  $r_2$ ).  
 44. relinquens eos (*hiat*  $r_2$ ) =  $d$ .  
 om. dicens (*hiat*  $r_2$ ) =  $a$ .  
 45. eis =  $d q$ .  
 47. ex *pro* de =  $a f$ .  
 multitudo *pro* turba.  
 48. quem *pro* quemcumque =  $d f g_1 h$ .  
 51. extendit . . . et (*hiat*  $r_1$ ).  
 52. in gladio (*hiat*  $r_1$ ) =  $h \delta$ .  
 53. exhibet .  $r_1 r_2$  exhiberet.  
 57. conuenerunt (*hiat*  $r_1$ ) =  $g_1 \delta$ .  
 58. in atrio sedebat.  
 59. om. autem.  
 61. templum hoc dei =  $b c d h$  .  $r_1$  (?)  $r_2$  t. dei hoc.  
 62. testificantur aduersus te.  
 64. ad dexteram =  $a b c f h q$ .

<sup>1</sup> So also Lebar Brece, p. 450; Bernard in *Trans. R.I.A.*, xxx. p. 323.

<sup>2</sup> So Lebar Brece, p. 431: *Trans. R.I.A.*, xxx. 323.

- Matt. xxvi. 65. blasfemat.  
 quid nunc adhuc.  
 67. cæderunt (*hiat*  $r_1$ ) .  $r_2$  cedentes.  
 eius *pro* ei =  $c h$  .  $r_1$  *om.* ei (?) .  $r_2$  *om.* alii *usque* dederunt =  $a b \delta$  .  
 69. illi et tu .  $r_2$  ei et tu =  $n$  (*corrector*).  
 72. *om.* et.  
 iuramento + dixit .  $r_1$   $r_2$  dicens =  $b c f h$  .  
 75. *om.* et *sec.* (*hiat*  $r_1$ ).  
 xxvii. 1. cum factum esset (*hiat*  $r_1$ ) =  $h$  .  
 3. damnatus est (*hiat*  $r_1$ ) =  $b c d g_1 q \delta$  .  $f$  ad iudicium ductus est :  $h$   
 indicatus est.  
 5. processit .  $r_1$   $r_2$  secessit =  $a b c h q$  .  
 suspendit se =  $d$  .  
 7. tæx illis hautem.  
 17. *om.* ergo .  $r_1$   $r_2$  autem *pro* ergo =  $a b c d f g_1 h q$  .  
 19. *om.* enim (*hiat*  $r_1$ ).  
 22. †qui *pro* quid.  
 23. *om.* illis =  $\delta$  .  
 pilatus *pro* praesis.  
 24. fier. in populo =  $b$  .  
 dicens coram populo.  
 28. *om.* exuentes eum (*hiat*  $r_1$ ) =  $a b c d q$  .  $r_2$  cum spoliassent eum.  
 29. *om.* et *pri.*  
 adorabant *pro* inludabant .  $r_2$  deludentes .  $a b c h q$  deludebant.  
 31. calamidem cocciniam .  $h$  chlamydem et uestem purpuream.  
*om.* et *tert.* =  $d$  .  $r_2$  *om.* et duxerunt *usque fin.* *vers.*  
 + eum *ad fin.* (*hiat*  $r_1$ ) .  $a b$  cruci eum figerent ;  $f$  eum cruci-  
 figerent.  
 32. tollere *pro* ut tolleret.  
 36. obseruabant (*hiat*  $r_1$ ) =  $\delta$  .  $r_2$  seruauæarunt.  
 37. illius *pro* ipsius.  
 inscribam .  $r_2$  scriptum est.  
 38. alterum *pro* unus *sec.* .  $r_1$   $r_2$  unum =  $f h q$  .  $a$  alter.  
 39. tunc euntes *pro* praetererentes autem .  $r_1$   $r_2$  transeuntes autem  
 =  $a b c d h q$  .  
 40. distruabas =  $b f_1 h \delta$  .  $r_2$  distruas =  $f$  (-es.)  
 42. es discende.  
 43. confidat.  
 dominum .  $r_1$  deo suo .  $r_2$  deum =  $c d f g_1 \delta$  .  $f_1$  domino.  
 iam liberet eum.  
 46. circa hautem horam (*hiat*  $r_1$ ) =  $c h$  ;  $r_2$  circa uero horam .  $d$  circa  
 . . . autem horam ;  $q \delta$  circa autem . . . horam.  
*om.* nonam.  
 48. arundinem .  $r_1$  in harundin [ . ] =  $a h$  .  
 49. sinete (*hiat*  $r_1$ ) =  $\delta$  .  
 51. usque ad.  
 terrae motus factus est magnus =  $h$  .  $a$  terrae motum factum est  
 magnum.  
 52. *om.* multa.  
 57. esset factum.  
 58. + iesu *ad fin.* (*hiat*  $r_2$ ).  
 65. sicut ipsi scitis (*hiat*  $r_2$ ).  
 66. *om.* abeuntes (*hiat*  $r_2$ ).  
 lapidem + et discesserunt (*hiat*  $r_2$ ).  
 xxviii. 3. hautem *pro* enim (*hiat*  $r_2$ ) =  $a b c d e f f_1 g_1 n q \delta$  .  $r_1$  et erat =  $h$  .

An inspection of this list brings to light both Italian (xxiv. 24) and African (xxiv. 35 ; xxv. 32, 34, 38 ; xxvi. 39) readings, the latter bearing about the same proportion to the former as in the preceding table. The only reading supported by  $d$  alone of our selected MSS. is *cecidit*, xxvi. 39. Moreover, we observe that nearly half the individual read-



- Luc. v. 14. *om.* ipse = *c* : *a b d f* ipse.  
 22. mala = *c* : *d* iniqua ; *om.* *a b f*.  
 ad eos = *c* : *d* eis ; *a b f* ad illos.  
 24. grabatum = *d* : *a b f* lectum ; *om.* *e*, *sed in vers. sequ. add. gra-*  
*battum post tulit.*  
 33. orationes = *a c* : *b f* obsecrationes ; *d* preceationes.  
 36. conueniet = *a d c* : *b f* conuenit.  
 Luc. vi. 8. surrexit et = *c* : *a b d f* surgens.  
 20. ad *pro* in = *e* : *a b d f* in.  
 29. ei = *c* : *b f* eum ; *a d* ab eo.  
 33. ipsud = *c* : *a b d f* om.  
 34. eis = *a c* : *b f* his ; *om.* *d*.  
 37. dimittetur uobis ; *c* dimittitur uobis : *a b d f* dimittimini.  
 vii. 4. *om.* ad iesum = *a d c* : *b f* ad iesum.  
 6. ibat autem cum illis iesus = *a d* (eis) *c* (abiit itaque) : *b f* iesus  
*autem abiit (ibat f) cum eis (illis f).*  
 12. mortuus = *a d* (mortuum) *c* : *b f* defunctus.  
 30. doctores = *a d c* : *b f* periti.  
 42. amabit (-auit  $\mu$ ) ; *c* amat : *b* dilexit ; *a* diliget ; *d f* diligit.  
 43. respondit = *c* : *a b d f* respondens.  
 47. illi = *d c* : *a f* ei ; *b* tibi.  
 viii. 4. qui = *a d c* : *om.* *b f*.  
 8. bonam et optimam = *a c* : *d* bon. et uberam ; *b f* bonam.  
 9. similitudo = *c* : *a b d f* parabola.  
 11. similitudo = *c* : *a b d f* parabola.  
 14. suffocantur (*om.* euntes) = *c* : *b* euntes simul suf. ; *f* euntes suf. ;  
*d* abientes suf., *a* ingredienti suf.  
 15. audiunt . . . et ([aud.] . . . et  $r_1$ ) = *c* : *a b d f* audientes.  
 tenent = *c* : *a b f* retinent ; *d* continent.  
 17. est enim = *d c* : *a b f* enim est.  
 absconsum = *d c* : *a b f* occultum.  
 19. eius et fratres = *d c* : *b f* et fratres eius ; *a* et fratres illius.  
 22. nauem = *d c* : *a b f* nauiculam.  
 24. discipuli = *a* ; *c* discentes (*ante* dicentes) : *om.* *b d f*.  
 26. in = *a d c* : *b f* ad.  
 28. exclamauit . . . dicens = *c* : *a b f* exclamans . . . dixit ; *d* exclama-  
*uit . . . dixit.*  
 49. eo = *a d c* : *b f* illo.  
 ix. 3. non (*quater*) = *c* : *d* non . . . neque . . . neque . . . neque ; *a b f* neque  
*(quater).*  
 habueritis = *c* : *a f* habeatis ; *d* habere ; *hiat b*.  
 11. eum = *a d c* : *b f* illum.  
 eis = *c* : *a b d f* illis.  
 24. hic = *d c* Cyp. i. 345 : *b* ille ; *om.* *a f*.  
 32. cum eo erant = *a d c* : *b* cum illo ; *f* cum illo erant.  
 47. iesus autem = *a d c* : *b* ad iesus ; *f* et iesus.  
 49. magister = *a d c* : *b f* praeceptor.

In twenty-one of these readings *e* alone of the group *a b d e f* supports  $\mu$   $r_1$ . Thus the anticipation which our experience led us to entertain, that the African element would be fairly conspicuous, is verified.

In the enumeration which follows we have of Italian readings 30 in all, or 16 if we include only those which have the support of *f* alone.

- Luc. iv. 5. iterum = *f* : *c* secundo ; *om.* (*a*) *b d*.  
 7. me = *f* : *a b* ante me ; *d c* in conspectu meo.  
 v. 6. ita ut rumperentur = *f* : *d* ut etiam . . . rumperentur ; *c* ut . .  
*dirumperetur ; a b* rumpebantur (-atur *b*) autem.

- Luc. v. 8. rogo te= $f$ :  $d$  rogo;  $e$  oro te; *om. a b.*  
 19. et per tegulas= $a f$ :  $e$  et per tectulatum;  $b$  et discoperuerunt tectum  
 et;  $d$  et detegentes inbrices ubi erat.  
 36. parabolam= $a d f$ :  $b e$  similitudinem.  
 vi. 10. sicut et altera;  $f$  sicut altera:  $b d$  sicut (+ et  $d$ ) alia; *om. a e.*  
 16. fuit traditor= $f$  (+ eius):  $b$  fuit proditor;  $a$  erat proditor;  $d$  etiam  
 et tradidit eum;  $e$  tradidit illum.  
 20. spiritu= $a f$ : *om. b d e.*  
 29. praebe + illi= $d f$ :  $a b e$  ei.  
 40. erit si sit= $a f$ :  $b$  erit ut sit;  $d$  erit;  $e$  erits.  
 vii. 3. qui cum audisset= $f$ :  $b e$  et cum audisset;  $d$  et audiens;  $a$   
 audiens autem.  
 14. iesus= $f$ : *om. a b d e.*  
 17. in omnem regionem= $f$ :  $d$  in omni regione;  $a$  in omni finitima  
 regione;  $b$  omni confinio regionis illius; *om. e.*  
 22. iesus= $f$ : *om. a b d e.*  
 24. iesus dicere;  $f$  dicere iesus:  $a b d e$  dicere.  
 42. illum= $a f$ :  $b d e$  eum.  
 43. autem (? *see. man. r<sub>1</sub>*)= $a f$ : *om. b d e.*  
 viii. 21. at ille= $d f$ :  $a b$  qui;  $e$  ille autem.  
 52. enim= $a d f$ : *om. b e.*  
 ix. 5. de pedibus uestris= $f$ :  $a b$  uestrum de pedibus;  $e$  uestrum  $a$   
 pedibus uestris;  $d$  pedum uestrorum.  
 16. dedit= $f$ :  $a d e$  dabat;  $b$  distribuit.  
 24. eam (*bis*)= $d f$ :  $a b e$  illam.  
 39. ab eo= $d f$ :  $a$  ab illo; *om. b*; *claus. om. e.*  
 41. incredula= $d f$ :  $a e$  incredibilis;  $b$  infidelis.  
 42. eum *see*= $f$ : *om. a b d e.*  
 45. hoc uerbum= $f$ :  $a d$  uerbum hoc;  $b$  uerbum istut;  $e$  uerbum illud.  
 intellegerent (intellex.  $\mu$ )= $a f$ :  $b d e$  sentirent.  
 50. sinite eum et= $f$ :  $a$  sinite illum et; *om. b d e.*  
 51. in hierusalem= $a d f$ :  $b$  hierusalem;  $e$  ad hierusalem.

In 11 readings we find coincidences with  $d$  alone:—

- Luc. v. 9. timor:  $a f$  paor;  $b$  miratio;  $e$  stupor.  
 20. uidens autem iesus fidem eorum (illorum  $r_1$ ):  $a$  et uisa fide illorum;  
 $b$  quorum ut uidit fidem;  $e$  ille autem cum uidisset fidem  
 illorum;  $f$  et uidens fidem eorum.  
 24. grabatum:  $a b f$  lectum; *om. claus. e.<sup>1</sup>*  
 viii. 4. talem ad eos (illos  $r_1$ ):  $b$  ad illos talem;  $e$  talem; *om. a f.*  
 14. adferent ( $\mu$  -unt) fructum:  $a f$  dant fructum;  $b$  referunt fructum;  
 $e$  fecundantur.  
 15. fructificant:  $a$  fructum dant;  $b e f$  fructum adferent ( $f$  -unt.)  
 17. occultum:  $a b f$  absconsum (-ditum  $f$ );  $e$  celatum.  
 ix. 10. ei:  $a b e f$  illi.  
 19. ex *pro* de:  $a b f$  de; *om. e.*  
 45. coopertum:  $a f$  occultum;  $e$  absconsum; *hiat b.*  
 47. eorum:  $a b e f$  illorum.

The only unsupported readings of  $\mu r_1$ , so far as I have observed which can be claimed as bespeaking, and that more than doubtfully, a reviser who consulted the Greek text, are v. 36 *scindetur*=R; vii. 38 *tersit*=**N**\* A D, etc. (*ἐξέμαξεν*).

### § 10. Individualisms of $\mu r_1$ in St Luke.

We come now to tabulate the African, Italian, and  $d$  readings found among the individual variants of our two manuscripts. It is curious

<sup>1</sup> But see above, p. 139.



to notice that while, as we might expect, the number of African variants in the two manuscripts is nearly equal, the Italian readings of  $\mu$  exceed those of  $r_1$  in the ratio of 4 : 1.

*African readings in  $\mu$ .*

- Luc. iv. 11. quia= $c$  :  $b d$  et ;  $f$  et quia ; *om. a.*  
 v. 7. cum uen. (*om. et quart.*)= $c$  :  $a f$  et uen. et ;  $d$  uenientes ergo ;  
*om. b.*  
 14. uade et= $a d c$  :  $b f$  uade.  
 15. de eo= $a d c$  (deo) :  $b f$  de illo.  
 31. respondit . . . et ;  $c$  respondit et :  $a b d f$  respondens.  
 36. *om. et pri.* = $c$  :  $a b d f$  et.  
*eos* = $a d c$  :  $b f$  illos.  
 vi. 9. aut *pri. et tert.* = $d c$  :  $b f$  an ; *hiat a.*  
 20. dixit (*hiat r<sub>1</sub>*) = $c$  :  $a b d f$  dicebat.  
 31. uobis faciant= $c$  :  $a b d f$  faciant (-ciam  $d$ ) uobis.  
 37. iudicetur de uobis= $c$  :  $b d$  de uobis . . . iudicabitur ;  $a d f$  iudice-  
*mini.*  
*ne condempnemini* = $c$  Cyp. i. 139 :  $a d$  ut non cond. ;  $b$  et non  
 condemnamini ;  $f$  et non condemnabimini.  
 45. bona= $c$  :  $a b d f$  bonum.  
 47. sit similis= $a c$  :  $d$  est similis ;  $b f$  similis (-e  $b$ ) est.  
 vii. 12. sequebatur cum ;  $c$  conseqebatur :  $d$  cum . . erat ;  $a b f$  cum.  
 22. et *tert.* = $c$  : *om. a b d f.*  
 25. uestitum= $c$  :  $a b f$  uestimentis indutum ;  $d$  uestimentis uestitum.  
 28. quia= $c$  :  $d$  quoniam ; *om. a b f.*  
*illo est* = $a d c$  :  $b f$  est illo.  
 36. recubuit= $d c$  :  $a b f$  discubuit.  
 40. dicere aliquod ;  $c$  dicere aliquid :  $a b f$  aliquid dicere ;  $d$  quod  
 dicere.  
 viii. 10. non est datum sed= $c$  (nisi) ; *om. a b d f.*  
*similitudinibus* ;  $c$  similitudinem (*sic*) :  $a b d f$  parabolis.  
 14. per sollicitudinem ;  $c$  per sollicitudinis (*sic*) :  $a b d$  a sollicitudini-  
 bus ;  $f$  a sollicitudine.  
 16. *om. ponit sec.* = $c$  :  $a b d f$  ponit.  
*omnibus luceat* = $c$  :  $a b f$  intrantes uideant lumen ;  $d$  qui in-  
 trant uideant lumen.  
 21. respondit= $c$  :  $a b d f$  respondens.  
 27. exit . . et ;  $c$  cum exisset ;  $d$  exierunt . . et :  $b f$  cum egressus  
 esset ;  $a$  gresso . . . illo.  
 28. *om. is* = $a d c$  :  $b$  is ;  $f$  qui.  
 29. alligabatur= $a c$  :  $d f$  ligabatur ;  $b$  uinctus.  
 49. *om. ei* = $c$  :  $a b f$  ei ;  $d$  illi.  
 51. puellae et matrem= $d c$  :  $a b f$  et matrem puellae.  
 ix. 14. eos= $d c$  :  $a b f$  illos.  
 25. ipsum hautem= $d c$  :  $a f$  autem ipsum ;  $b$  autem.  
 41. *om. et peruersa post incredula* = $a c$  :  $b d f$  et peruersa.  
 47. adprehendit . . et= $c$  :  $b d f$  adprehendens ;  $a$  adprehensum.

*African readings in  $r_1$ .*

- Luc. iv. 6. dixit= $a d c$  :  $b f$  ait.  
 10. te conseruent= $c$  :  $b f$  conseruent te :  $a d$  custodiant te.  
 17. erat scribtum= $a d c$  :  $b f$  scriptum erat.  
 23. ad illos= $a c$  :  $b f$  illis ;  $d$  ad eos.  
 35. et nihil= $c$  :  $b$  nihilque ;  $a d f$  nihil.  
 v. 7. paene= $d c$  : *om. a b f.*

- Luc. v. 8. quod cum uidisset=*e* (*om.* quod): *b f* quod cum uideret; *a* hoc uiso; *om. d.*  
 quoniam=*d e*: *a b f* quia.  
 12. *om.* rogauit eum (*e spat.*)=*d e*: *b* rogabat eum; *f* rogauit eum; *a* orabat illum.  
 15. audire... curari=*a d e*: *b f* ut audirent... curarentur.  
 18. [in]ferre eum=*e*: *b f* eum inferre; *a* inferre illum; *d* inducere eum.  
 28. surrexit et=*e*: *a b d f* surgens.  
 38. seruantur=*a d e*: *b f* conseruantur.  
 vi. 2. quid=*a e*: *b* ad eos quid; *f* illis quid; *d* ei ecce quid.  
 3. ad illos=*e*: *a b f* illis; *d* ad eos.  
 21. et sitiunt iustitiam=*e*: *b* et sitiunt; *a* et sititis; *om. d f.*  
 35. quo[niam]=*a d e*: *b f* quia.  
 46. me uocatis=*a e*: *b f* uocatis me; *d* mihi dicitis.  
 48. [est]enim=*e*: *a b d f* enim erat.  
 49. domum=*a d e*: *b f* domum suam.  
 vii. 6. dicens illi=*e*: *a d f* dicens ei; *b* dicens.  
 22. renuntiate=*a e*: *b f* nuntiate; *d* dicite.  
 34. uinarius=*e*: *a b f* bibens uinum; *d* uinipotator.  
 37. uas=*e*: *b d f* alabastrum; *a* ampullam.  
 42. ambobus=*e*: *a b d f* utrisque.  
 43. et dixit=*e*: *a b d f* dixit.  
 dixit=*e*: *a b f* dixit ei; *d* dixit illi.  
 45. osculando=*a e*: *b f* osculari; *d* osculans.  
 viii. 17. nihil=*a e*: *b d f* non.  
 19. ad eum *pri.*=*d e*: *a b f* ad illum.  
 24. accesserunt... et=*e*: *a b d f* accedentes.  
 magister=*a e*: *b f* praeceptor; *d* domine domine.  
 25. iesus=*e*: *om. a b d f.*  
 ix. 3. non calciamenta=*e*: *a b* neque cal.; *d f om.*  
 4. et... exite=*a d e*: *b* et... proficiscimini; *f* donec exeatis.  
 11. excipiens=*a e*: *b f* except... et; *d* suscipiens.  
 12. deserto loco=*a d e*: *b f* loco deserto.  
 22. quo[niam]=*a d e*: *b* quod; *f* quia.  
 32. cum eo *sec.*=*d e*: *b f* cum illo; *a* ei.  
 39. subito=*a e*: *d* desubito; *b f* et subito clamat.  
 50. *om.* ad illum=*d e*: *a f* ad illum; *b* ad illos.  
 54. eos=*a d e*: *b f* illos.

*Italian readings in  $\mu$ .*

- Luc. iv. 5. in montem excelsum ualde<sup>1</sup>; *f* in montem excelsum: *d* in montem altum ualde; *e* supra montem; *om. b.*; *a* hierusalem.  
 mundi=*d f*: *a* orbis terrarum; *b e* orbis terrae.  
 41. eos=*f*: *e* ea; *om. a b d.*  
 19. eum cum lecto=*f*: *a* eum cum lectulo; *b* illum cum lecto; *e* illum... eum grabattum; *d* grabattum cum paralytico.  
 24. dimittendi=*f*: *a* remittendi; *b d* dimittere; *e* dismittere.  
 31. eis=*f*: *a b e* ad illos; *d* ad eos.  
 vi. 7. in sabbato=*f*: *a* (*e spat.*) *b d e* sabbato.  
 23. calumniantibus uobis=*f*: *b d* cal. uos; *a* his qui calumniantur uos; *e* eis qui uobis iniuria faciunt.  
 42. perspicies (*hiat r<sub>1</sub>*)=*a f*: *b* respicies; *d e* uidebis.  
 vii. 10. qui languebat=*f*: *d* aegrum; *om. a b e.*  
 15. protinus (*hiat r<sub>1</sub>*)=*f*: *om. a b d e.*  
 21. *om.* in *ul inuit.*=*a f*: *b d e* in.  
 26. dico uobis etiam: *f* ita *d. u.* etiam: *a d* etiam *d. u.*; *b* utique *d. u.* et; *e* ita *d. u.* et.

<sup>1</sup> Here, as in other cases to be mentioned presently, we have a conflate reading, one member of which is found in *d*.

- Luc. vii. 36. in domum =  $a d f$ ;  $b e$  domum.  
 48. peccata + tua =  $f$ : *om.*  $b d e$ .  
 viii. 2. ab *sec.* (*hiat*  $r_1$ ) =  $f$ : *om.*  $b d e$ ; *claus.* *om.*  $a$ .  
 11. haec est autem =  $f$ :  $a b d$  est autem haec;  $e$  est autem . . . haec.  
 12. cecidit =  $f$ :  $b$  seminati sunt;  $e$  seminatum est; *om.*  $a d$ .  
 15. cecidit (*hiat*  $r_1$ ) =  $f$ : *om.*  $a b d e$ .  
 18. et *sec.* =  $a d f$ :  $b$  etiam; *om.*  $e$ .  
 29. eum =  $d f$ :  $a b e$  illum.  
 49. ad principem =  $f$ :  $a b a$  principe;  $d$  ab archisynagogo;  $e$  puer principis.  
 ix. 5. excutite puluerem =  $d f$ :  $a b e$  puluerem . . . excutite.  
 illis =  $a f$ :  $b d$  supra (-per  $d$ ) illos;  $e$  super eos.  
 39. eum *pri.* =  $f$ :  $a b d e$  illum.

*Italian readings in  $r_1$ .*

- Luc. v. 14. mundatione =  $f$ :  $b e$  emundatione;  $d$  purificatione;  $a$  purgatione.  
 vi. 38. cumulatam =  $a f$ :  $b$  confersam;  $d$  inpletam; *om.*  $e$ .  
 viii. 14. cum audierint =  $f$ :  $a b$  audiunt et;  $d e$  audierunt et.  
 ix. 13. iesus =  $f$ : *om.*  $a b d e$ .  
 18. discipuli eius =  $f$ :  $b d e$  discipuli;  $a$  discipuli sui.  
 19. respondentes =  $a d f$ :  $b e$  responderunt.  
 54. uidentes =  $a d f$ :  $b e$  cum uidissent.

We must now give a list of individual readings of  $\mu$  and  $r_1$  in which the  $d$  element appears. It will be found specially remarkable in  $\mu$ . In this manuscript we observe in the first place a constant tendency to substitute the oblique cases of "is" for those of "ille." In many instances the resulting reading is found in  $d$  alone of the group  $a b d e f$ . Examples will be found at iv. 9, 39; vi. 7, 17; vii. 12, 36; viii. 18, 22, 30, 40; ix. 2, 3, 13, 33, 42. Omitting these, we discover sixteen  $d$  readings. The list follows:—

*d readings in  $\mu$ .*

- Luc. iv. 7. *om.* procedens:  $a b f$  procidens;  $e$  prostratus.  
 21. *om.* quia:  $b e f$  quia;  $a$  quoniam.  
 36. in omnes:  $b f$  in omnibus;  $a e$  super omnes.  
 v. 18. inducere:  $a b e f$  inferre.  
 37. utres ueteres *sec.*: *om.* ueteres  $a b e f$ .  
 vi. 26. homines:  $a b e f$  omnes homines.  
 vii. 10. in domum:  $a b e f$  domum.  
 viii. 10. scire:  $b f$  nosse;  $e$  cognoscere; *om.*  $a$ .  
 16. cooperit:  $a e f$  (-riet  $a$ ) operit; *om.* *claus.*  $b$ .  
 37. rogauerunt autem:  $b f$  et rogauerunt;  $a$  et rogauit; *hiat*  $e$ .  
 46. scio (sciu  $d$ ):  $a b f$  cognoui; *hiat*  $e$ .  
 49. magistrum:  $a e$  illum;  $f$  eum; *om.*  $b$  (?).  
 56. expauerunt<sup>1</sup> (*hiat*  $r_1$ ): *om.*  $a b e f$ .  
 ix. 19. ex profetis prioribus<sup>2</sup>;  $d$  ex profetis:  $a b f$  propheta . . de prioribus;  $e$  profetarum.  
 27. filium hominis (+ uenientem  $d$ ) in gloria sua:  $a b e f$  regnum dei.  
 51. conpleretur:  $a b f$  complerentur;  $e$  supplerentur.

<sup>1</sup> Apparently a conflation in  $\mu$ .

<sup>2</sup> Again, it would seem, a conflation.

The list for  $r_1$  is not so long. It comprises, in addition to substitutions of the parts of 'is' for those of 'ille' at iv. 21, 38, viii. 45 (*ms.*), the following:—

*d readings in  $r_1$ .*

- Luc. iv. 24. amen amen : *a b e f* amen.  
 vi. 14. primum simonem : *om.* primum *a b e f*.  
 35. [iniq]uos (?*ms.*) : *a e* nequas ; *b f* malos.  
 vii. 12. adpropiasset (-aret *d*) : *a b e* adpropinquaret ; *f* adpropinquavit.  
 viii. 3. illis : *a* illi ; *b ei* ; *e f* eis.  
 39. in *see.* : *a b f* per ; *hiat e*.  
 ix. 10.  $r_1$  seorsum + in uicum<sup>1</sup> ; *d* seorsum + in castellum (*om.* in locum desertum) : *om.* in uicum *a b e f*.  
 33. faciamus (facio *d*) hic : *om.* hic *a b e f*.

Finally, a comparison of the lists now given for St Luke with those previously made for St Matthew brings to light the following facts. Allowing for the difference in length of the passages, and for the very small portion of the Matthean fragment for which African evidence is available, we find that the number of African variants in St Luke, attested by both  $\mu$  and  $r_1$ , is as nearly as possible what our experience of St Matthew might have led us to expect. The same remark may be made of the comparatively small group of *d* readings ; though the examples of this class of variants are more satisfactory in the third than in the first Gospel. As regards these two constituents, the Irish Old Latin text appears to be homogeneous in the two passages. On the other hand, we observe in St Luke a very remarkable increase in the number of Italian variants. When we consider those readings in which  $\mu$  is unsupported by  $r_1$ , or  $r_1$  by  $\mu$ , our results are not quite identical. We find a large increase in the African element of  $\mu$ , while in  $r_1$  the African readings have increased even more notably, being about four times as numerous as might have been anticipated from St Matthew. The Italian element in  $\mu$  has become very considerable, though still less important than the African ; in St Matthew it was very small indeed. The Italian element in  $r_1$  and the *d* element in both  $\mu$  and  $r_1$  are insignificant in both Gospels.

<sup>1</sup> A conflation.

## CHAPTER VII.

## THE LAST PAGE.—I. THE LITURGICAL FRAGMENT.

WE have already seen, in the second chapter of this work, that the last few verses of St John, followed by the colophon, are written on the recto of the final leaf of our manuscript. We have seen too that the task of deciphering the faded letters of the latter portion of the colophon is no easy one. When we turn the leaf and enter upon the study of its verso, our difficulties increase. At the first glance no more than a word or two appear to be legible. After I had spent some weeks upon it, however, some scarcely visible marks began to shape themselves into letters, and finally I have been able to read almost the whole page.

It was obvious to hope that chemical re-agents might restore some letters which, without the use of restoratives, were illegible. I accordingly sought permission of the Board of Trinity College to apply sulphide of ammonium to the faded writing. My request was granted. Professor Emerson Reynolds brushed the page with this application—usually so potent—and Professor Gwynn kindly undertook to watch the effect. The result has been disappointing. Photographs taken for me by Mr Greenwood Pim have enabled me to read (somewhat doubtfully) four letters which had previously escaped me, and I was made confident of one reading, about which I had had some hesitation. But with these exceptions I have been obliged to content myself with what my eyesight could reveal to me, assisted only by good light and some little patience.

Two facts at once strike us when we proceed to examine this page of the manuscript,—*first*, that the writing is in the same hand as the main portion of the book; and *secondly*, that it follows the colophon. Combining these two facts, and assuming the correctness of the hypothesis which I have advanced as to the origin of the manuscript,<sup>1</sup> we are entitled to infer that, unlike the biblical text, this page has no claim to represent an exemplar coeval with St Melling of Ferns, but that it was written *by an inmate of his monastery*, about the close of the eighth or beginning of the ninth century.

Of the contents of the page Mr Westwood writes,<sup>2</sup> “There is (1) an inscription on the verso of the last page (*sic*), in the same hand as the text, containing the Magnificat, part of the Sermon on the Mount, Apostles’ Creed, ‘Patricius Epis’, and (2) a circular table

<sup>1</sup> Above, p. 17.

<sup>2</sup> *Palæographia Sacra*, Irish Biblical MSS., ii. p. 5.

with inscriptions." The first of these we now proceed to examine, the other we reserve for the next chapter.

Of the liturgical fragment Mr Westwood's words are an approximation to a correct description, but they are no more. The document *contains* neither Magnificat nor Apostles' Creed, though both are referred to; it *does* contain "Patricius Episcopus," though a word of explanation was needed in the case of this somewhat mysterious title; and finally, it refers to several other pieces of interest which Mr Westwood has not mentioned. All this will be evident from the transcript which I now give. The document is written in one column of about thirteen or fourteen lines, each containing some thirty-five letters, towards the left of the page, as if room were left for a second narrower column to the right, which has not been added.<sup>1</sup> The exterior margin is very narrow. In the transcript, I have italicised letters which are not distinct enough to be read with entire confidence. Those which have been conjecturally supplied are enclosed in square brackets. The title (if any existed) is illegible, with probably a line or so of text.

----- sent. al  
 ----- .—Magnificat.  
 — onform. Benedictus usq; ioh[annem babtis]tū  
 p̄cursore dñi] Uidens h̄ ih̄s turbas ascendit t  
 [i monte]m . b — e — n XPS illum conrici  
 [dead ī] *memoria et̄na* Patricius epis orat  
 [pro nobis omnibus] ut deleantur protinus peccata  
 [quæ commisimus] INuitiata q̄ feramus pec  
 [tora Exaudi donec d]icis peccata plurima.—  
 [Maiesta]t[em]q; imensam corici dead et conglu  
 [ria Uni]tas [u]sq; i finem.Credo i dñm pat  
 [noster -----] .—

l. 1. "al" perhaps = "alleluia." There are apparently two letters in the right margin between ll. 1 and 2.

l. 3. After "f" we seem to have either "o" followed by six, or "a" followed by five vertical strokes. The latter are some combination of the letters "i," "r," "m," or "n." The letter "t" at the end of the line is in the margin, and does not appear to be part of the text.

l. 4. The line over "dñi" and perhaps the "so" of "precursorem" are legible.

l. 10. The last letters are very difficult to read; see below.

l. 11. There is possibly one letter between "[Uni]tas" and "[u]sque" (?="i": see below).

For the benefit of those who, like myself, are ignorant of the Irish tongue, I may note that the Rev. T. Olden tells me that "conrici dead" = usque in (literally, 'donec attingat') finem.

<sup>1</sup> The length of a line of writing is 5·8 cent., the breadth of the page being about 10·5 cent.

A glance through this document will suffice to show that it is liturgical in character, and that the ecclesiastical office which it represents contained at least the following parts: (1) "Magnificat"; (2) Conf. . . .; (3) "Benedictus", etc.; (4) "Uidens autem", etc.; (5) "Christus illum", etc.; (6) "[. . .]memoria", etc.; (7) "Patricius episcopus", etc.; (8) "Inuitiata quod", etc.; (9) [ . . .]icis peccata plurima; (10) "[. . .]q; immensam", etc.; (11) "[. . .]tas," etc.; (12) "Credo", etc.

Can any of the parts thus described be identified? Some with the greatest ease. For example, that which is called "Magnificat" (1) is beyond doubt the hymn of the Blessed Virgin, as used at Vespers in the mediæval Church of England, and at Evensong according to the Reformed Anglican usage. That this Canticle was used in the early Irish Church we need no further assurance than that which its presence in the *Liber Hymnorum*<sup>1</sup> affords. Again, "Uidens autem", etc., (4) is obviously a lection from St Matt. v., "Jesus" being inserted after "autem" in agreement with the majority of MSS. of the Irish recension, including the Book of Mulling itself. Once more, "Credo", etc., (12) is the Apostles' Creed, which we know to have been commonly employed in Celtic worship.

One word more before we leave l. 11 as to its last word. It is natural to read "pat" as the fourth word of the Creed "patrem." And this is not impossible, for the abbreviations in our MS. are sometimes quite arbitrary. Thus "patrem" is represented by "pā" at Matt. xv. 4, 6, while the same letters stand for "patri" in the intervening verse, not to mention other instances. But, on the other hand, t̄ is almost always used for "ter." I have therefore ventured to regard "pat" as the first word of the Lord's Prayer (13) and to conjecture "noster" as the first of the illegible words in l. 12. That the Credo should be followed by the Pater Noster is just what we might expect. The same sequence occurs in the Book of Dimma, the Visitation of the Sick in the Book of Mulling, the Antiphonary of Bangor, and the Book of Hymns f. 30v, *i.e.*, apparently in all the Celtic offices, not strictly Eucharistic in character, in which the Creed is found;<sup>2</sup> the Book of

<sup>1</sup> *The Book of Hymns of the Ancient Church of Ireland, edited from the original manuscript in the Library of Trinity College, Dublin, with translation and notes*, by James Henthorn Todd; Dublin, Fasc. i. 1855, Fasc. ii. 1869. Dr Todd collated a second copy of the Book of Hymns, then in the Library of St Isidore's at Rome, but the opportunity of doing so did not occur till too late to enable him to make any considerable use of it in the two published fasciculi of his edition of the Book of Hymns. It is now preserved in the Franciscan House, Merchants' Quay, Dublin, and I have occasionally referred to it as the "Franciscan Copy." A new and complete edition of the *Liber Hymnorum* is being prepared by Professors Bernard and Atkinson, and will, it is hoped, be shortly issued to members of the Henry Bradshaw Society. In the references to the printed editions of this book throughout the present chapter I denote them by the letters *L.H.* The figures following these letters give the pages of Todd's edition. With them I supply (enclosed in brackets), by the kindness of the editors, the references to the corresponding pages of the Bradshaw Society edition.

<sup>2</sup> Compare the old Irish Tract *De Arceis*, edited by Mr Kuno Meyer (*Rev.*

Deer<sup>1</sup> being, of course, no exception. The word "noster," especially if written nī, would fill only a small part of the vacant space in l. 12, which appears to have contained twelve or fourteen letters. What may have followed we can only guess. But we shall possibly guess correctly, if we take for our guide a hitherto inedited page (f. 30v) of the *Liber Hymnorum* to which Professor Bernard has called my attention.<sup>2</sup> We there find the words "Credo in deum patrem omnipotentem. usque in finem. et pater noster., Ascendat oratio," etc. It is quite possible that the formula, here indicated by its first words "ascendat oratio," may have followed the Creed and the Lord's Prayer in our fragment as well as in the Book of Hymns, and that in it we have hit upon number (14). I therefore print it here, as it is found in the Stowe Missal.<sup>3</sup>

Ascendat oratio nostra usque ad tronum caritatis tuæ, domine, et ne uacua reuertatur ad nos postulatio nostra, per.

After these, perhaps the piece most easily recognised is that commencing "Patricius episcopus orat" (l. oret)—(7). This was written in full, and enough remains legible to place beyond question its identity with one of the couplets added in the Antiphony of Bangor (f. 15v), and in the copy of the Book of Hymns preserved in the Franciscan Monastery, Merchants' Quay, Dublin, to the Hymn of Secundinus in honour of St Patrick. The couplet runs as follows<sup>4</sup> :—

Patricius æpiscopus oret pro nobis omnibus  
ut deleantur protinus peccata quæ commisimus.

The identification of these lines leads to the anticipation that the Hymn of St Secundinus itself, to which they are subjoined as an appendix in the only other MSS. which are known to contain them, may form one of the earlier parts of the office. And this anticipation will be strengthened when we remember that we are dealing, probably, with a *monastic service* and recall the contemporary words of the Book of Armagh,<sup>5</sup> "Patricius scs eps honorem quaternum omnibus monasteriis et æcclesiis per totam hiberniam debet habere . . . . III. Ymnum eius per totum tempus cantare . . ." If this "Hymn of St Patrick" forms part of our office, it will most probably be "Christus illum," etc. (5), or the following number. Now at first

*Celtique*, Oct. 1894), in which the recitation of Paters is frequently enjoined without the Credo (capp. 1, 3, 10, 13, 20, 31, 33), while the Credo never stands alone, being always either followed (14 [*cel credo* is here left untranslated], 26), or preceded (21) by a Pater.

<sup>1</sup> Warren, *The Liturgy and Ritual of the Celtic Church*, p. 166.

<sup>2</sup> *L. II.* (i. 156).

<sup>3</sup> Warren, *op. cit.* p. 227.

<sup>4</sup> I quote from the Antiphony, with which our MS. agrees. In the Franciscan Book of Hymns there are some variations :—

Patricius sanctus episcopus oret pro nobis omnibus  
et miseriatur protinus peccata quæ commisimus.

<sup>5</sup> F. 16. a. 1 (Stokes, *Tripert. Life*, ii. p. 333).



view it may appear impossible that it should be (5) ; for on a reference to the *Liber Hymnorum* we discover that neither the Hymn of Secundinus, nor, indeed, any other poem in the whole collection commences with these words. The supposition, however, must not be at once set aside, for we find that the *third last stanza* of the hymn, which is alphabetical, begins with the very words of which we are in search. No other liturgical form which I have come across commences with the words "Christus illum" ; these words occur in our office just at the very place where we might expect to have the Hymn of Secundinus, or possibly an extract therefrom ; we may feel fairly confident therefore that in the concluding stanzas of this hymn,<sup>1</sup> which I now transcribe, we have discovered (5) of the office.

Xp̄s illum sibi legit in terris uicarium  
qui de gemino captiuos liberat seruitio  
plerosque de seruitute quos redemit hominum  
innumeros de zabuli obsoluet dominio.

Ymnos cum apocalipsi psalmosque cantat dei  
quosque ad edificandum dei tractat populum<sup>2</sup>  
quam legem in trinitate sacri credit nominis  
tribusque personis unam docetque substantiam.

Zona domini precinctus diebus et noctibus  
sine intermissione deum orat dominum  
cuius ingentis laboris percepturus premium  
cum apostolis regnabit sanctus super israel.

We must now pause for a moment to consider a possible objection of a sceptical critic. Is it possible, at least is it likely, it may be asked, that the last three stanzas of a popular hymn should be chanted in an office such as that which we are considering, apart from the preceding portion ? The likelihood does not appear to be increased by the circumstance that the verses when separated from their context do not make very obvious or very good sense.

A complete answer to this difficulty is found in a story given by Dr Todd, in his notes to the *Liber Hymnorum*, from the Lebar

<sup>1</sup> *L. II.*, i. 21 (i. 44).

<sup>2</sup> On the words "dei populum" the Lebar Brecc has the gloss "popuitrine," which Dr Todd, (*L. II.*, i. 22) takes to mean "popul trine, the people of the Trinity or the people of God, as in the Latin." This note receives confirmation from, while at the same time it illustrates, a phrase in the collect, "Creator naturarum," preserved in the Book of Mulling (Warren, p. 172), viz. : "has *trinitatis populi tui* . . . preces." In the Book of Deer (fol. 28b, Warren, p. 164) this runs "*tremenis populi tui*." Probably the Book of Mulling gives us the earlier form of the collect, composed by one who thought, if he did not write the rough draft, in Irish, and translated into too literal Latin an idiom of the vernacular speech, which has been removed in the recension given in the Book of Deer. The change would be facilitated by the close resemblance of the two words "tremenis" and "trinitatis" in the minuscule Irish character.

Brecc.<sup>1</sup> The story is interesting, albeit somewhat frivolous; moreover, it not merely serves our immediate purpose of annihilating the sceptic, but throws out a hint which we shall find valuable by and by. I need scarcely apologise therefore for quoting it almost at full length.

St Secundinus (or as the narrator calls him, Sechnall) had read his adulatory hymn to St Patrick, in whose honour it had been written. "When the recitation of the hymn was concluded, Sechnall said, 'I must have reward for it,' said he. 'Thou shalt have it,' said Patrick, 'the number of days that are in a year, the same number of souls of sinners shall go to heaven, for the making of this hymn.' 'I will not accept that,' said Sechnall, 'for I think that too little, and the praise is good.' 'Thou shalt have then,' said Patrick, 'the number of the hairs that are on the casula of thy cowl, the same number of sinners to go to heaven, for the hymn.' 'I will not accept it,' said Sechnall, 'for who is the believer who would not take that number to heaven, although he were not praised by myself, nor by anyone, as thou art.' 'Thou shalt have,' said Patrick, 'seven every Thursday, and twelve every Saturday, to go to heaven, of the sinners of Erin.' 'It is too little,' said Sechnall. 'Thou shalt have,' said Patrick, 'every one to go to heaven *who sings it lying down and rising up*.' 'I will not accept that,' said Sechnall, 'for the hymn is too long, and it is not every one that can commit it to memory.' '*Its whole grace then*,' said Patrick, '*shall be upon the last three stanzas of it*.' 'Deo gratias,' said Sechnall.<sup>2</sup>

"The Angel promised the same thing to Patrick upon the Cruach, viz., heaven to every one who shall sing *the last three stanzas of it at lying down, and at rising up*, as is [said by the poet],

"A Hymn, which, if sung when alive,  
Will be a protecting Lorica unto all."

The interview of St Patrick with the Angel on Croagh Patrick, alluded to in the last sentence, is recounted elsewhere in the Lebar Brecc,<sup>3</sup> but, oddly enough, without the words here quoted from it. But when we turn to the eleventh century *Tripartite Life* we find both stories. The former is abbreviated, but the final saying attributed to St Patrick occurs in it in an even more extravagant form: "'Whosoever of the men of Ireland,' saith Patrick, 'if the *three last chapters or the three last lines, or the three last words*, shall come at death with a pure intention, his soul shall be prepared.'"<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *L. II. i. 33.* See also Whitley Stokes, *Tripartite Life*, ii. p. 398 *sqq.*

<sup>2</sup> The introduction to the Hymn of Secundinus is wanting in the Trinity College Book of Hymns, a leaf having probably been lost at the beginning of the MS. The Franciscan copy, however, has an introduction, in which this story is told in a somewhat abbreviated form—the latter portion, on which our argument is built, being identical with what we find in the Lebar Brecc (see Whitley Stokes, *Tripartite Life*, p. 382 *sqq.*)

<sup>3</sup> Stokes *op. cit.*, p. 476 *sqq.*

<sup>4</sup> *Ib.*, i. p. 246 *sq.* On the same page of the *Tripartite Life* demons are represented as saying that a certain "rich countryman . . . used to repeat two or three stanzas of Patrick's hymn . . . it was rather a satire than a panegyric on Patrick. Nevertheless by this we have been vanquished."

The other is given at full length, and in a form which satisfies the reference just cited.<sup>1</sup> St Patrick had, by means of his bell, succeeded in ridding Ireland from demons for "seven years and seven months and seven days and seven nights. Then the Angel went to console Patrick." His consolation consisted in offering him a number of boons from heaven in order to induce him to leave the Rick (Croagh Patrick). The conversation between the Angel and the saint is much too long to quote, but a few sentences are here printed.

“Is there aught else He granteth to me?” saith Patrick. “There is,” saith the Angel: “every one who shall sing thy hymn, *from one watch to the other*,<sup>2</sup> shall not have pain or torture.” “The hymn is long and difficult,” saith Patrick. “Every one who shall sing it *from Christus illum to the end . . .* his soul shall not go to Hell.”

I do not guarantee the historical character of these tales. They demonstrate, however, two facts to which I ask special attention:— 1. That it was customary to substitute for the hymn of Secundinus its last three stanzas, exactly as appears to have been done in our office. 2. That the usual time for reciting the hymn, in whole or in part, was before retiring to rest at night, and after rising in the morning.

We have now advanced so far as to have identified (5) and (7) with the hymn of Secundinus, and a supplementary stanza or antiphon added thereto in two manuscripts. It is natural to guess that the intervening number is another similar addendum to the hymn. Four such supplementary couplets are known,<sup>3</sup> and one of them, found both in the *Lebar Brece* and the *Liber Hymnorum* (T.C.D. MS.), is sufficiently attested by the few letters still remaining legible to have stood at this place in our MS. The couplet is as follows:—

In memoria eterna erit iustus  
ab auditione mala non timebit.

The Book of Hymns has done us excellent service. We call it in to help us once more in identifying “Inuitiata quod,” etc. (8). No hymn in the book has these for its first words. But we discover that of which we are in search in the *three last stanzas* of the hymn of St Cummain Fota,<sup>4</sup> which are as follows:—

Inuitiata quo (*sic*) feramus pectora  
regi regnanti ab aevo in secula  
alleluia.

<sup>1</sup> Stokes, *Tripartite Life*, p. 114 sqq.

<sup>2</sup> A phrase which I do not venture to interpret.

<sup>3</sup> The variety which exists among the five authorities for these four stanzas is remarkable. Numbering those in the Trinity College Book of Hymns 1, 2, 3 respectively, and "Patricius Episcopus" 4, they are given in the following various relative positions in the authorities. *T. C. D. Book of Hymns*, 1, 2, 3; *Antiphonary of Bangor*, 2, 4 (the order here is not quite certain); *Lebar Brecc*, 1, 2; *Franciscan Book of Hymns*, 2, 3, 4; *Book of Mulling*, 1, 4.

<sup>4</sup> *L. II.* i. 80 (i. 21).

Gloria patri atque unigenito  
simul regnanti spiritu cum agio  
alleluia.

Nimis honorati sunt amici tui deus<sup>1</sup>  
nimis confortatus est principatus eorum  
alleluia.

Again, be it noticed, the last three stanzas stand in lieu of the whole hymn,—a striking confirmation of the conclusion which has been already reached in the case of St Secundinus' poem. The most sceptical will scarcely take refuge in the supposition that three verses as a substitute for the whole was an indulgence permitted only in the case of a single lorica, and not extended to less famous compositions.

As to the identity of number (9) "[. . .]icis peccata plurima," to which I now proceed, I have no doubt. Its position, following the concluding stanzas of the hymn of Cummain Fota, renders it probable, if any other indication is found pointing the same way, that it is one of the collects written at the end of this poem in the MSS. And such an indication we have in the words "peccata plurima," which stand as the concluding words in the antiphon<sup>2</sup>—

Exaudi nos deus per merita apostolorum optima  
ut deleantur pessima nostra peccata plurima.

Our only difficulty is to explain "icis." If my conjecture is correct, these must be the concluding letters of a phrase equivalent to "as far as." "Donec dicis" (a construction quite common in mediæval Latin prose), seems a not improbable guess, though it would have been more satisfactory if it had fitted the space better. The traces of the letter preceding "icis," which still remain, suit "d," and I have therefore inserted these words in my transcript. However the letters "icis," be explained, it is interesting to observe that our MS. here agrees with the Franciscan Codex in omitting the collect "Per merita," etc., which follows "Exaudi nos" in the T. C. D. Book, though the form of expression—" "[. . .]icis peccata plurima," for "conrici dead," or "usque in finem"—seems to indicate a consciousness on the part of the scribe that in some copies a second collect or some other subsidiary matter, was found in addition to "Exaudi nos."

Why St Cummain's hymn should have been recited in St Molling's

<sup>1</sup> Dr Todd points out (*L. II.*, i. 80) that the last stanza is unmetrical, and is merely Ps. cxxxviii. 17, with one various reading, and therefore cannot have been intended by the author as part of the hymn. It was certainly so regarded, however, by the scribe of the *Lib. Hym.*, as Dr Todd shows, and also, if I have reasoned correctly, by the scribe of the Book of Mulling, whose evidence is probably older by some centuries (see Whitley Stokes, *Goidelicæ*, 2nd ed., p. 61; *Tripartite Life*, p. ci. *sq.*).

<sup>2</sup> *L. II.* i. 80 (i. 21).

monastery is not very clear, as there appears to be no notice in historical documents connecting him either with Molling or with the district in which he lived. He was, however, famous throughout Ireland, and an elder contemporary of our saint (ob. 661. *Annal. IV. MM.*).<sup>1</sup>

Number (10)—“[. . .]que imensam,” etc.—has next to be considered. We have to look for a stanza whose second word is “immemsam,” and we at once perceive that the stanza of which we are in quest cannot be the first of a poem. No hymn could have for its first word a substantive followed by the conjunction “que,” and in this place q; can scarcely stand for the relative “quæ.” Thus we have one further proof, if such were needed, of the custom of reciting the last stanzas of a canticle in place of the whole. A search through the Book of Hymns will quickly convince us that number (10) is an extract from the poem “Ymnum dicat,”<sup>2</sup> ascribed to Hilary of Poitiers.<sup>3</sup> Here are its *last three stanzas* :—

<sup>1</sup> We have here, it will be seen, a confirmation of the hypothesis that the page under review, and therefore also the Biblical portion of the MS. as we have it, was written, not by St Molling, but by a scribe who lived a century after Molling's death. It is unlikely that the fame of Cummain should have led to the recitation of his loricæ within thirty years of his death, in a monastery with which he had no direct connection; still less likely that the principle of three stanzas for the whole should have been applied to his poem so soon.

<sup>2</sup> This poem appears to have been used as a loricæ. See Whitley Stokes, *Lives of Saints from the Book of Lismore* (*Anecdota Oxoniensia*, 1890), p. viii. *sqq.*, a reference which I owe to Professor Bernard. Compare also the Book of Leinster, fol. 282a (quoted by Dr MacCarthy, *Trans. R.I.A.*, xxvii. 183), and the ancient tract *De Arreis* published in the *Revue Celtique* for Oct. 1894, capp. 26, 32. In both these passages from the Treatise *De Arreis*, the Hymn of St Hilary is enjoined for recitation with the “biait,” which Mr Kuno Meyer (p. 492) takes to mean Ps. cxviii. (A.V. exix.). In this he follows Mr Whitley Stokes (*Book of Lismore*, p. 406). But throughout this treatise the Psalms are regularly cited by their first words in *Latin* (capp. 10, 18 [Ps. l., A. V. li.], 33, etc.); and to understand “biait” of this Psalm seems very unhappy in cap. 3—“lauda ¶ biait ¶ pater after each psalm.” Here we should have Ps. cxviii. referred to by an *Irish* title in the same sentence with “lauda” and “pater,” and the direction, in itself improbable, that Ps. cxviii. should be recited after every psalm. If “biait” in capp. 26, 32 were equivalent to the Beatitudes of St Matt. v. (cf. *Book of Lismore*, p. 323), we should have “Ymnum dicat” in juxtaposition with this passage (together with Credo and Pater in cap. 26) as in our fragment. The “chapters” of the “biait” *De Arreis*, 32, *Book of Lismore*, p. 180, may seem to favour the application of the word to the psalm: but the “chapters” may mean either a verse of a psalm or a single beatitude. Thus in the Preface to Ultan's Hymn (*L. H.* i. 60 [l. 14]), as frequently elsewhere, the word “chapters” is applied to the stanzas of the poem—“There are three chapters in it, and four lines in each chapter.” If this view of the meaning of “biait” be accepted, an even more remarkable parallel to our office than the passages just mentioned in the treatise *De Arreis* presents itself in the eleventh century “Second Vision of Adamnan” (Lebar Brece; see the *Rev. Celt.* xii. 433): “In the time that is given to God for fasting and prayer it is wrong to think of aught save the benefit of the soul both by preaching and celebration, to wit, a hundred genuflexions with a Biait, a *Magnificat*, a *Benedictus*, and a *Miserere mei Dominus*, and a cross-vigil, with Patrick's Hymn, and the Hymn of the Apostles [*i.e.* the hymn given in the Bangor Antiphonary, f. 4v *sqq.*, or that of Cummain Fota? see *L. H.* i. 83 (l. 18)], and smiting of hands, and a *Hymnum dicat*, and Michael's Hymn, . . . and they strike their breasts . . . and all say, ‘May mercy come to us.’”

<sup>3</sup> *L. H.* ii. 151 (i. 36).

Maiestatemque immensam concinemus iugiter  
ante lucem nuntiemus christum regem saeculo.

Ante lucem decantantes christo regi domino  
et qui in illum recte credunt regnaturi cum eo.

Gloria patri ingenito gloria unigenito  
simul cum sancto spiritu in sempiterna secula.

It will be observed that what we reckon—in this following both MSS. of the Book of Hymns and the majority of copies of the *Ymnium Divat*—as the last stanza is a doxology. This doxology is in reality not part of the hymn, as the scribe of the Bangor Antiphony seems anxious to hint to us by his punctuation (f. 4r). And indeed the same thing is evident from the fact that two other hymns in the Antiphony close with the same words, namely, “Ignis Creator,” f. 11r,<sup>1</sup> and “Media noctis,” f. 11v. A St Gall manuscript of the Hymn, in fact, omits the doxology, as Professor Bernard, to whom I am indebted for much of my knowledge of this poem, has been good enough to inform me.

To make up the customary three stanzas, however, it is necessary to include it; and this appears to be the explanation of the words which I have read “et conglu[ria].” The letters are difficult to decipher partly because of imperfect formation in the case of the first two or three, and partly because of a rent in the vellum which crosses the last three letters of l. 10. It is thus *possible* that for *c* we should read *a* or *o*, for *o*, *a*; *n* may just as well be *r*; *g* I had for some time read as *t*, and *u* may be *h*. Nevertheless, I am pretty confident that the reading in my transcript is correct. By way of explanation it is only necessary to say that “con”=“with,”<sup>2</sup> and that “gluria”=“gloria” by a common substitution of *u* for *o*.<sup>3</sup>

We have already seen that the Hymn of Secundinus is followed by two antiphons. In like manner the antiphon “Exaudi,” etc., follows the Hymn of Cummain Fota. It may therefore be regarded as not improbable that number (11) is one of the antiphons belonging to the Hymn of Hilary (10). Now three such antiphons are known to exist, and all of them are preserved in the Trinity College Book of Hymns. They begin respectively, “Te decet ymnus,” “Canticis spiritualibus,” “Unitas in.” The Franciscan copy has the first two of these, while, as Professor Bernard tells me, no other known MS.

<sup>1</sup> Mr Warren writes (*Ant. of Bangor*, ii. 46), “It will be noticed that this doxology [to ‘Ignis Creator’] is written in fresher ink and by a different hand from the rest of the hymn.” If this be correct my argument is strengthened; but it does not seem to be borne out by the facsimile.

<sup>2</sup> Whitley Stokes, “Calendar of Oengus,” (*Transactions R.I.A.*, Irish Manuscript Series, vol. i.), p. cccxxviii.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. for this substitution Gilbert, *National Manuscripts of Ireland*, part i. p. vi. Many examples might be cited from the Book of Mulling, the most noticeable being the name of the scribe, the first syllable of which is elsewhere commonly written Mol. “Gloria” seems not to occur elsewhere in the MS.

of the Hymn gives any antiphons. We may fairly expect—though, of course, it must not be assumed as certain—that number (11) is one of the three just mentioned. In deciding among them we have not much to guide us. The space before “usque” is occupied with letters for the most illegible. However, the letter “t” is fairly distinct, and is followed by (apparently) two letters, *forming part of the same word*. This last consideration disposes of the claim of “Te decet.” Both the remaining antiphons have the letter “t” in a suitable position, but the preference must be given to the latter, as the marks following “t” may well represent “as,” but can scarcely be “icis.” If, as is possible, another letter is obliterated between “[Un]tas” and “usque” it was probably “i”=in. I am inclined, therefore, to believe that number (11) is the antiphon which I now transcribe<sup>1</sup>:—

Unitas in trinitate te deprecor Domine ut me semper trahas totum  
tibi uotum uouere.

Of number (2) I can say no more than that it appears to be an Irish rather than a Latin formula. It has a parallel in “Don-fair trocaire” (“May mercy come to us”) etc., of the Second Vision of Adamnan.<sup>2</sup>

I have left for the last number (3) “Benedictus,” etc., because I cannot be quite confident that my identification of it is correct. At first, one might feel inclined to assume that it is the canticle still usually designated by this name, and used in the ancient Irish Church.<sup>3</sup> This supposition, however, is rendered untenable by the words “usque ioh . . .,” *i.e.*, as far as the word “iohannes,” or some case of this word, or the line beginning therewith. For, though the Benedictus has St John the Baptist for its subject, he is not mentioned in it by name. I would suggest that what is meant by the words which I have noted is an extract from the Hymn, attributed to St Columba, beginning “Noli Pater.”<sup>4</sup> It consists of seven stanzas, the fourth, fifth, and sixth of which I transcribe.

Benedictus in secula recta regens regimina  
iohannes coram domino adhuc matris in utero

Repletus dei gratia pro uino atque siccera

Elizabeth et Zacharias uirum magnum genuit  
iohannem baptizam precursorem domini.

The words of the last line, allowing for customary abbreviations, would about suit the spaces of lines 3 and 4 of my transcript, and,

<sup>1</sup> *L. H.* ii. 161. (i. 42). On the extreme rarity of this Antiphon see Warren, *Antiphonary of Bangor*, ii. p. 38.

<sup>2</sup> See p. 153, note 2. Similar forms are found in the treatise *De Arceis*, 12, 21 (*Rev. Celt.*, 1894, p. 495 *sq.*).

<sup>3</sup> *L. H.* ii. 190 (i. 57).

<sup>4</sup> *L. H.* ii. 262 (i. 88).

if they are inserted there, we have an exact description of these stanzas. Again, as before, three stanzas for the whole is the principle of selection. All this points to the correctness of our hypothesis that we have in these stanzas the passage referred to in number (3).<sup>1</sup> One difficulty only has to be met. In all the other cases in which three stanzas were chanted as a substitute for the entire hymn the three last were chosen; and in the case of the hymn of St Secundinus, the legend to which I have already appealed implies that this was the regular and customary practice. Is it likely that the usage was different with the "Noli Pater"?

I answer that, whether *a priori* likely or not, a departure from this usage does appear to have taken place in the present instance. For the words "Benedictus usque ioh . . ." imply that only a portion of a canticle was to be sung, and that this portion did not conclude with the last verse of the hymn. Had it been so, the ordinary formula which occurs elsewhere in the office *conrici deadi*, or its equivalent *usque i finem*, would have been used.<sup>2</sup> And, moreover, good reason can be given why precisely the portion of the hymn "Noli Pater" above quoted should be sung in preference to the last three stanzas. It is possible that for once the compiler of our office may have paid attention rather to the meaning of the words which he put into the mouths of those who used it than to traditional custom. At least this much is clear: the three stanzas just cited make good sense, and are in themselves a complete poem on St John the Baptist. They are, moreover, the only stanzas in which he is mentioned. Had the last three stanzas been chosen, the extract would have begun in the middle of a sentence and have been absolutely unmeaning as regards its first three lines, while the last stanza would have introduced an entirely new thought, apparently altogether unconnected with what immediately precedes it, and in the hymn itself (supposing that we have it in its original form) more closely associated in its idea with the opening verses. This last the MS. stanza runs thus:—

Manet in meo corde dei amoris flamma  
ut in argenti uase auri ponitur gemma.

I think, then, that the probability is that the hymn described as "Benedictus usque ioh . . ." is stanzas 4, 5, and 6 of St Columba's "Noli Pater." The probability will be either destroyed or transformed into certainty when (if ever) a few more letters of can be read. Meanwhile we must be content to guess.

<sup>1</sup> It ought to be added that the combination of letters which I have read as "tā" is not exactly similar to anything which I have observed elsewhere in the manuscript. For this reason no argument can be based upon it. I have not noticed any other place in which "tam" occurs at the end of a line: but *cf.* the combinations used for "tio," Mar. vii. 8, xv. 41; "triam," Mar. vi. 1; "tia," Mar. ix. 20; "tiam," Matt. xii. 42, Joh. i. 16; "sti," Matt. xxv. 24, xxvi. 25, etc.

<sup>2</sup> Yet see p. 152.



Assuming then, for the present, the correctness of our guess, we turn now to the introduction to "Noli Pater"<sup>1</sup> in the *Liber Hymnorum*, in order to discover what the compiler of this collection has to tell us of its origin and use. He ascribes it to the time when King Aedh granted to St Columba the site of a church at Derry. No sooner had the gift been presented than "the town was burned, with everything that was in it. . . . The fire, however, in consequence of its greatness, threatened to burn the whole Daire, so that it was to save it, at that time, that this hymn was composed. Or it was the day of Judgment he had in view, or the fire of the festival of John." Rather a liberal choice! and none the less so because the only allusions to fire in the entire hymn are the word "fulgure" in the first, and "amoris flamma" in the last stanza. It is obvious that all this is mere criticism and guess-work. Clearly the only thing in it all which rests on tradition is the ascription of the poem to St Columba. But we stand on firmer ground in the next sentence, in which the writer tells us of the customs of his own day, and which quite accounts for his anxiety to discover or manufacture allusions to fire in the hymn. "And it is sung," he adds, "[as a protection] against every fire, and every thunderstorm, from that time forth; and whosoever sings it at bed-time and at rising, it protects him against lightning, and it protects the nine persons whom he desires [to protect]." It was, then, a lorica, and it was used night and morning.

We have now acquired some general information as to the character of the office which forms the subject of our consideration—not such information as we might have desired, or as we may perhaps hope for in the future, but still sufficient to make a further question worth asking: What was the purpose of the office? when was it used?

If we could restore the first line or two of the page, speculation would probably be needless. The title would supply us at once with the knowledge which we seek. Meanwhile, it will have been noticed that the story from the Lebar Brece, which I have cited in connection with the hymn of St Secundinus (5), as well as the note with which it concludes, with regard to the angel at the Cruach, and the parallel passages from the *Tripartite Life* convey definitely the information that the hymn was to be said, as a lorica, at bed-time and rising. A similar statement, as we have just seen, is made in the *Liber Hymnorum* about the "Noli Pater" (3). These two hints are sufficient to lead to the conclusion that the office was said daily, either at bed-time, as was Compline in the mediæval Church, or in the early morning, like Matins, or rather perhaps, at both these times.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *L. H.*, ii. 259 (i. 87). The introduction in the Franciscan copy is in some respects different. But it has the important words, "Whosoever repeats it on lying down and rising up it saveth him from every fire" (Stokes, *Tripartite Life*, p. civ.). The story is preserved, with the mention of lying down and rising up as the special times of recitation, in the Edinburgh MS. of St Columba's Life. Skene, *Celtic Scotland*, ii. p. 482 sq.

<sup>2</sup> Possibly, however, in private. Mr Warren regards this as the more probable view. "I am inclined to think," he writes in the *Academy*, Jan. 26th, 1895,

For this conclusion we find some confirmation from the "Ymnum Dicat" of St Hilary (10). This hymn is marked off by its concluding stanzas as one eminently likely to have been used at an early morning service. The two immediately preceding the doxology, with their twice-repeated "ante lucem," have been quoted above. Before them come the following, not less appropriate for morning use :

Ante lucem turba fratrum concinnemus gloriam  
qua docemur nos futuri sempiterna secula

Galli cantus<sup>1</sup> galli plausus proximum sentit diem  
nos cantantes et precantes quae futura credimus.

It is therefore no more than one might expect that, in the Book of Cerne, the *Ymnum Dicat* is one of two poems which follow a collection of fourteen prayers and hymns, expressly stated to be intended for use in the morning. And that the hymn was used in the morning may further be implied by the rubric prefixed to it and "Aeterne rerum" in a manuscript cited by Thomasius, "Incipiunt hymni nocturni post mediam noctem ad primum gallicantum."<sup>2</sup>

Evidence, however, which seems at first view to indicate that this poem was used at another time of the day, must not be overlooked. In the Trinity College Manuscript<sup>3</sup> two accounts of the composition of the poem are given. The first, which is somewhat obscure, is as follows :—"Hilarius . . . fecit hunc ymnum xpo in monte gargani, after eating dinner (naprainne = prandium) illic in the robber's house. And after giving thanks to God, the sons of life dwindled post till they were not bigger than infants, as that seemed unto the priest who was with them. An angel came and said to them, Nisi penitentiam egeritis in infernum ibitis, egerunt ergo penitentiam et dedit deus indulgentiam eis per istam laudem sic nobis convenit canere post prandium." The last words may seem to indicate that it was customary to sing this hymn, after the supposed example of Hilary of Poitiers, at the conclusion of a meal, rather than at bed-time or

p. 83, "that we have here a collection of formula . . . intended for private use by a sick person as a sort of compound *lorica* or charm." He thus connects our fragment with the Office of the Visitation of the Sick. Against this view I have given what appear to me decisive reasons in the *Academy* of Feb. 2nd, p. 106, viz. : that it is written at the end of St John's Gospel, the *Visitatio* following St Matthew, and being written by a different scribe. I may now add one or two words. It seems probable, as has just been pointed out, that the Office was intended for *daily* use. This is scarcely consistent with its being said only by the sick. And we find in its various parts nothing specially appropriate to sickness. The hymn "Noli Pater" was a *lorica* against fire and lightning. Why was protection against these more needed by a sick man than by one who was in good health ?

<sup>1</sup> On the meaning of this phrase see Warren. *Antiphonary of Bangor*, ii. p. 60.

<sup>2</sup> Warren, *op. cit.*, ii. p. 37. It must be remarked, however, that this rubric may suggest rather midnight than the early morning : see Warren as referred to in the last note.

<sup>3</sup> Stokes, *Goidelicæ*, 2nd ed., p. 93. *L. II.*, ii. 151, 162 (i. 35).

in the early morning.<sup>1</sup> This, however, must not be too readily assumed, for several reasons. *First*, there can be no doubt that the passages already cited in connection with numbers (5) and (3) bear witness to an established usage. To me it seems that the sentence just quoted does not go so far as this. It does not so much justify what *is* done, as state what, in the writer's opinion, *ought* to be done (conuenit). It has rather the sound of an apology for the practice of a few persons of special piety, than of a defence of a settled monastic rule. *Secondly*, it is a little doubtful how we are to understand the word "canere." It may seem natural to take it transitively and supply "istam laudem" (*i.e.*, the hymn of St Hilary) from the preceding clause. It is, however, equally possible that it is used intransitively, in which case no reference whatever is made to the recitation of our hymn. And so Dr Todd appears to render it.<sup>2</sup> *Thirdly*, it is to be noted that the Trinity College copy here lacks the support of the Franciscan manuscript. And *lastly*, admitting that we have here proof of the recitation of the hymn of St Hilary "post prandium," as a regular practice, this does not in any way conflict with the supposition that it was chanted at other times as well.

And, in fact, we have definite proof that this was the case. The poem is mentioned in stanza xxiv of the metrical rule of Ailbe of Emly as follows<sup>3</sup> :—

"The *Hymnum Dicat* should be sung  
At striking the bell for Canonical Hours,  
All wash their hands carefully,  
The brethren assume their habit."

Thus the regular use of the hymn was not restricted to the conclusion of meals. It does not, indeed, seem very likely that it was recited before every hour, as the first two lines here quoted seem to imply. The mention in the third and fourth lines of the monks performing their ablutions and donning their habit points rather to the first office of the day. And with this the context agrees. The stanza (xxii) next but one before that just quoted runs :—

The perfect observance of the Canonical hours  
Is reckoned the chief rule ;  
Correct *Matins*, according to the Divines,  
*End of night, beginning of day.*<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> It might be argued on similar grounds that the Hymn of Secundinus was recited *before* meals. *Trip. Life*, ii. 399.

<sup>2</sup> "Thus it is our duty to sing after dinner:" to which he appends the note, "It (*i.e.* the story) does not appear to have much connection with the duty of *saying grace* after dinner, which, nevertheless, seems to be intended as its moral, from the words 'sic' etc." *L. H.*, ii. 162.

<sup>3</sup> *Irish Ecclesiastical Record*, vol. viii. p. 183. The rule is preserved in a 17th century manuscript at Brussels: Stokes, *Martyrology of Gorman*, p. x.

<sup>4</sup> So, as Mr Stokes kindly informs me, the last line should be rendered. The writer in the *Irish Ecclesiastical Record* has it, "Is at the close and the beginning of day."

Then, in stanza xxiii, the direction is given that no one is to speak "till the hour of one." This leads us to interpret stanza xxiv as referring to the "striking of the bell" for the first Canonical hour, viz., Matins. And, in accordance with this, we have in stanza xxix,—

It is not permitted to the brethren to depart  
Until the hour of Tierce, etc.

What seems to be meant is that, at the sound of the bell, the monks recited the *Ymnus Dicat*, and then assembled in the Oratory for Matins, and that they remained there till Tierce had concluded. Thus we have here further reason for believing that the hymn of St Hilary was used after rising from bed in the morning. Would it be too much to draw the additional conclusion that our office was meant to be used by the monks in private, in their several cells, before they met in the Oratory for united worship at the first Canonical hour? However this may be, our conviction as to the time of recitation of our office, in spite of the statement in the T.C.D. manuscript, may remain unshaken.

Setting aside the question of the time, there is one particular in which all the passages which have been cited agree. They all go to show that the office, whether used in the morning, after meals, or in the evening, was said *daily*. And this appears to receive some confirmation from two considerations which I shall now mention.

1. Allusion is made by Adamnan (*Vit. S. Col.*, ii. 9.) to a certain "hymnorum liber septimaniorum sancti Columbae manu descriptus." This according to Reeves (*ad loc.*), was "a volume containing hymns for the various services of each day in the week."<sup>1</sup> If this be so, we may infer that the daily services consisted in large part of hymns or canticles. And the inference is borne out by another passage in the same work. St Columba, as is well known, died just after the bell for matins had rung. The service proceeded as usual. And then we are told (iii. 23; Reeves, p. 239),—"hymnis matutinalibus terminatis"—the body of the saint was borne to the hospice. Again it is implied that a daily service consisted mainly of hymns. Such is the character of the office which we are considering, and so far our supposition is confirmed that it was intended for daily use in the monastery.

2. In the life of St Molling, preserved in Marsh's Library, Dublin, and dating, according to Reeves, from the 14th century, the following narrative occurs.<sup>2</sup> "The King [Fianachta, from whom St Molling had procured the remission of the Borromean tribute by a trick] sent

<sup>1</sup> According to the Lebar Brece Preface to the *Altus*, St Columba received from Pope Gregory the Great "the Hymns of the week, that is [a book with] hymns for each night of the week" (Reeves' *Vit. Col.*, p. 318 sq.), which is not without its bearing on the question of the time of day at which our office was used. The Preface in the *Liber Hymnorum* (L. H., ii. 221 [i. 63]) omits the latter clause.

<sup>2</sup> I quote from *The Ancient Life of St Molling, being translation of an old Manuscript preserved at Marsh's Library, Dublin, with Notes and Traditions*, by P. O'L. Dublin, James Duffy and Sons, p. 19 sq. A description of the so-called

the army with anger after St Molyng to kill him together with his people. The holy senior Molyng, knowing this, bade his own people to proceed more speedily on their way, praying to the Lord; and he himself began a sacred poem in the Scotie (Irish) language, in which he named many saints, praying to them and singing their praises, commencing with a virgin and finishing with the same—that is, first making mention of the most Blessed Virgin Brigid, and at the end using the name of Mary the Mother.” A little further on the writer adds, “That sacred canticle of St Molyng is always kept with honour in Ireland, and men of good will, undertaking a journey, sing it; and through the favour of St Molyng, and the rest of the saints whose memory is sung in it, the Omnipotent God sets them free from divers dangers.”<sup>1</sup>

If the hymn was, as the writer of this Life asserts, kept in honour throughout the whole country, it must have been above all sung in St Molling’s own monastery at St Mullins. Why, then, is no mention made of it, so far as can now be discovered, in our office? Perhaps because it was in the Irish tongue, which may have been sufficient to exclude it from the service of the Church.<sup>2</sup> A more probable reason, however, may be assigned. It was a lorica intended, not for daily, but for occasional use, namely, at the commencement of a journey. It would therefore be excluded from a daily office. Such then, we again infer, was the nature of the service which we have been considering.

To sum up. We have recovered in these obscure, scarcely legible lines of the Book of Mulling a sketch of—or, to use a more technical word, a kind of directory for—what appears to have been a daily office used night or morning in the monastery of St Molling of Ferns, in the early part of the 9th century. It is, I believe, the only sample of a daily service of the Ancient Irish or Scottish Church known to exist. It is, undoubtedly, unlike the Irish Missal, of home manufacture. It certainly does not inspire us with much respect for the liturgical instinct of our fathers in the Faith, but it

“Book of Kilkenny,” of which this Life forms a part, may be found in a paper by the late Bishop Reeves, in the *Proceedings of the Royal Irish Academy*, second series, vol. i.—*Polite Literature and Antiquities*, p. 339, “On a MS. volume of Saints—chiefly Irish—now in Primate Marsh’s Library, Dublin, commonly called the *Codex Kilkenniensis*.” See also his *Life of St Columba*, p. xxv. sq., where it is dated “thirteenth century.”

<sup>1</sup> The Hymn is given in the Book of Leinster (facsimile edition, p. 308) and has been printed by Mr S. H. O’Grady in his *Silva Gallica*, vol. i. p. 389 sq. Mr Whitley Stokes has published a translation of the first stanza in the *Revue Celtique*, t. xiii. p. 117, and the concluding stanza (misplaced in the Book of Leinster) he has been good enough to put into English for me. These stanzas in their English dress are as follows:—

O Brigit, bless our way, that evil come not to us on our journey,  
O nun from full Liffey, may we safely reach home by thine aid!

Come to protect us, O Mary, O Mother of the King [of heaven]  
O Emmat, O splendid Fidnab, O fair Cohnnat and O Brig!

<sup>2</sup> Cf. Warren, *Liturgy and Ritual*, p. 155 sqq.

has its interest as one of the not numerous examples of their work in this department.

It may be well to add a scheme of this service, so far as I have succeeded in restoring it. It consists of the following parts (following an illegible portion at the beginning) :—

1. The song of the B.V.M. (*Magnificat*).
2. ?
3. Stanzas 4, 5, and 6 of the Hymn of St Columba (*Noli Pater*).
4. A lection from the beginning of St Matthew v., followed apparently by a formula not yet identified.
5. The last three stanzas of the Hymn of St Secundinus (*Audite Omnes*).
- 6 and 7. Two stanzas supplementary to this hymn (*In memoria* and *Patricius Episcopus*).
8. The last three stanzas of the Hymn of Cummain Fota (*Celebra Iuda*).
9. The Antiphon "Exaudi," etc., appended to this hymn.
10. The last three stanzas of the Hymn of St Hilary of Poitiers (*Hymnum dicat*).
11. The Antiphon "Unitas in Trinitate," etc.
12. The Apostles' Creed.
13. The Lord's Prayer, followed possibly by
14. The Collect "Ascendat oratio," etc.

All the parts of this office, so far as they have been identified (with the exception, of course, of 4), are found in the *Liber Hymnorum*, while, of 14 Latin Hymns in the two fasciculi of this book published by Todd, at least five are recited: a valuable proof of the use of the collection in Ireland at least a century or two before either of the MSS. of it now extant was written.<sup>1</sup> At the same time, the copies used at St Mullins in the 9th century must have differed considerably from both of those which we now possess. Thus, our manuscript agrees with the Franciscan copy against its rival in the insertion of "Patricius episcopus" (though with a different text) after the Hymn of Secundinus, while it sides with the T. C. D., and against the Franciscan copy, in adding "In memoria." Again, with the Franciscan copy it omits "Per merita," etc., after the Hymn of Cummain Fota, while it differs from both, but most widely from the Franciscan, in giving "Unitas in Trinitate" as the *only* Antiphon after the Hymn of St Hilary.

One or two words may be added before leaving our Liturgical Fragment. It will be observed that I argue for the existence of a practice in the ancient Celtic Church of singing three, usually the last three, stanzas of certain hymns in place of the whole. And I imagine the proof already given is sufficient; but I am tempted to conclude this chapter by quoting some further passages, which not merely corroborate my reasoning, but themselves receive a fresh meaning when the prevalence of the practice referred to is borne in mind. The first of these is from the Preface to the Hymn of Ultan

<sup>1</sup> For their date see Stokes, *Trip. Lib.*, vol. i. p. ci sq.

in praise of Brigid.<sup>1</sup> "Audite virgines laudes," says the writer, "is its beginning. The alphabetical order is in it. . . . Dicunt alii, that this hymn was originally long, but (that) there remain here only four chapters of it, viz., the first chapter *and the last three chapters*, causa brevittatis."<sup>2</sup> This is exactly as it should be. The first "chapter" would be cited, no doubt, as giving the title; the last three as being, in some sort, equivalent to the whole.

That this was actually the case we are further assured when we glance at the hymn as printed by Dr Todd.<sup>3</sup> First come three stanzas beginning respectively with the letters X ("Xps in nostra insola") Y Z, and then the stanza—

Audite uirginis laudes sancta quoque merita  
etc.                      etc.

This stanza Dr Todd gives excellent reason for believing not to have belonged to the original poem, in spite of the assertion of the scholiast that some reported it to be the original first verse. How, then, are we to account for its presence here? Most readily. The end of a poem in the Book of Hymns is regularly indicated by repeating under its last line the first word or two of its first stanza. Thus, after the stanza "Zona," etc., of the Hymn of Secundinus are written the words "Audite omnes,"<sup>4</sup> separating the poem itself from the supplementary verses which follow. In like manner, the close of Ultan's Hymn would be marked in the MSS. by writing "Audite," with or without some of the following words of the first stanza, under the last line. When the custom of reciting only the last three stanzas produced its natural result, and the scribes only wrote, and finally only knew, these stanzas, in all likelihood the words "Audite" or "Audite uirginis" would still be preserved as indicating the title of the hymn. Some scribe, seeing the words in his exemplar, and knowing another poem beginning with the same words<sup>5</sup> (though not written with the same metre or assonances), supplied, as he supposed, the missing portion of the stanza by tacking on to the phrase which remained words from the other hymn.

Dr Todd, it is true, will not admit this explanation. "The suggestion," he says (p. 58), "of the scholiast's preface, that the hymn

<sup>1</sup> *L. II.*, i. 60 (i. 14).

<sup>2</sup> In the Franciscan copy the first two sentences are found as here quoted, but the last sentence is omitted. Whitley Stokes, *Tripartite Life*, vol. i. p. civ. sq.

<sup>3</sup> *L. II.*, i. 57 (i. 14).

<sup>4</sup> The Franciscan copy has the one word "Audite."

<sup>5</sup> Hymns beginning with "Audite" were not uncommon. Out of twelve poems in the Antiphonary of Bangor, two begin with this word, and another has it for the first word of its second verse, the first verse being prefatory (ff. 13 v, 15 v, 17 v). These three hymns are the only strictly alphabetical compositions in the book, for that on f. 36 v is scarcely an exception. Cf. Mone, *Latcainische Hymnen*, iii. 242, "Mehrere irische Hymnen fangen mit Audite an. S. *Muratorii* anecdota 4, 136 flg., vielleicht nach Deuterom. 32, No. 671, 1." Other examples are given by Warren, *Antiph. of Bang.*, ii. p. 52.

originally consisted of a capitulum for every letter of the alphabet, is unnecessary." He forgets that the scholiast, by his "dicunt alii," informs us that he is not making a suggestion, but handing on a tradition. And the tradition, especially when supported by the considerations which I have already adduced, is excellent evidence for the fact. At the very least, the passage cited shows this, that to the writer of the Preface there was nothing strange in a poem being abbreviated by the very peculiar method which we know was applied to St Secundinus' Hymn.<sup>1</sup> The statement<sup>2</sup> that "Alphabetical poems containing stanzas for the last three letters of the alphabet only were common" does not in the least invalidate this testimony, unless we have direct evidence that these are complete, and not merely "abbreviated" hymns. It is, indeed, very likely that many of them are in their original form; but this is exactly what one might expect, for when it became fashionable in repeating the hymns to neglect all the stanzas but three, the fashion would very quickly follow among hymn-writers of economising labour by writing no more than the three stanzas which were all they could expect to be sung. The very existence, in fact, of a large number of hymns, such as Dr Todd refers to, is a signal confirmation of the thesis which I have endeavoured to establish, rather than an argument on the other side.

But Dr Todd's main proof, that the writer of the preface was incorrect in his account of Ultan's Hymn, is of much interest—none the less so because it completely breaks down in view of the results at which we have arrived. He appeals (p. 55) to the Basle MS. A. vii. 3,<sup>3</sup> in which occurs what "is probably a part of an ancient office" in which St Ultan's Hymn was recited. After two hymns recited in the office have been given at full length, the words follow:—

item xps in nostra insola que uocatur.

This is proof, according to Todd, that by the compiler of the office the line "Christus in nostra insula" was regarded as the beginning of the hymn. Those who have assented to my reasoning with reference

<sup>1</sup> Todd seems to have been nearer the true explanation of the phenomena of Ultan's Hymn and others of the same class than he was himself aware. He remarks (p. 55, note 2), "The indulgence granted to the repetition of the Hymn of St Patrick was ultimately conceded to the last three verses of it," and then he asks, "Was it on this principle that the Hymn to St Brigid contained only the verses beginning with the last three letters of the alphabet?" If for "contained" he had written "was represented by" the question might have been answered in the affirmative.

<sup>2</sup> For the correctness of which some evidence would have been welcome. The only instance given by Dr Todd is a hymn which contains five stanzas. No instance, so far as I have observed, is met with in the Bangor Antiphonary or (with the exception of that now before us) in the Book of Hymns.

<sup>3</sup> This manuscript is also described by F. Keller in his *Bilder und Schriftzüge*, published in the *Mittheilungen der Antiquarischen Gesellschaft in Zürich*, vii. bd. iii. heft, p. 86, by Bishop Forbes, *Arbuthnot's Missal*, p. xli. sqq., and by F. E. Warren, *Liturgy and Ritual*, p. 185. Some interesting remarks upon it will also be found in Berger's *L'Histoire de la Vulgate*, p. 115.



to the use of the hymns of SS. Secundinus, Columba, Cummain, and Hilary, in our office, will at once perceive that this argument is absolutely worthless. All our experience tends to show that it is quite unsafe to assume that hymns, when used in the Offices, were recited in their entirety.<sup>1</sup> And in fact we have here a fresh and most unexpected instance of the principle for which I have been contending. The hymn of Ultan is represented in the Office preserved in the Basle MS. by its *last three stanzas only*.

Having gone so far, it is worth while to notice how closely our Office and that of the Basle MS. agree in character. Both consist principally of hymns; in both we find three stanzas of a hymn used instead of the whole; in both the hymns are followed (in some cases at least) by appropriate collects; and in both there are lections, in ours from Holy Scripture, in the other from the apocryphal Epistle of Christ to Abgarus. Our Office, however, is clearly the fuller and more elaborate of the two.

Our second illustrative passage shall likewise be taken from a preface in the Book of Hymns. In that which is prefixed to the hymn of St Columba, written, as we are told, to supply the deficiencies of his celebrated "Altus" and beginning "In te Christe," our attention is arrested by these words:—<sup>2</sup>

Columille made this hymn. . . . But some say that it was not Columille at all that composed it, [except] from "Christus redemptor" to (?) [the words] "Christus crucem," and that is the reason why many repeat that part.

The portion, which we are here informed was alone repeated by many stands as follows<sup>3</sup>:—

Christus redemptor gentium christus amator uirginum  
christus fons sapientium christus fides credentium

Christus lorica militum christus creator omnium  
christus salus uiuentium et uita morientium

Coronauit exercitum nostrum cum turba martirum  
christus crucem ascenderat christus mundum saluauerat.

These *three stanzas*, therefore, according to the testimony of the scholiast, were in his day recited by many in place of the entire hymn. Once again, however, Dr Todd rejects the assertion of the writer of the preface. "Perhaps," he somewhat strangely remarks,<sup>4</sup> "the meaning may be" the stanzas which we have copied, together with the two which follow them and form the conclusion of the poem. But when a man makes a plain statement, why should he mean some-

<sup>1</sup> This applies also to Psalms. See the tract *De Arreis* (*Rev. Celt.*, Oct. 1891), cap. 13, where the words "In manus usque veritatis" are doubtless a description of the single verse Ps. xxx. 6 (A. V. xxxi. 5).

<sup>2</sup> *L. H.*, ii. 252 (i. 84). W. Stokes, *Goidelica*, 2nd ed., p. 103. Square brackets enclose words the original of which is illegible in the manuscript.

<sup>3</sup> *L. H.*, ii. 257 (i. 85).

<sup>4</sup> *L. H.*, ii. 253.

thing entirely different? It will certainly be wiser to accept the scholiast's account of the customary practice with regard to the recitation of the hymn, while we feel quite at liberty to dispute the theory held by him or others as to the origin of this practice. It seems far from improbable that, according to prevalent usage, the three stanzas printed above were regarded as the equivalent of the poem, and that *as a result* of the special honour thus assigned to them they alone came to be regarded as St Columba's composition. But however this may be, there can be little doubt that we have here another instance of the substitution of three stanzas for the whole. And it is an instance of peculiar interest from the circumstance that the three stanzas selected are not those with which the hymn concludes. This is a strong confirmation of our identification of the third element of our office with three stanzas—but not the last three—of the hymn “Noli Pater.” In the case of the “In te Christe,” the selection of three medial stanzas is established. And the coincidence is perhaps worth remarking, that for both of these poems Columban authorship is claimed by the scholiast.

Finally, we may be allowed to add two or three extracts, the meaning of which certainly needs elucidation. The gloss which the investigation now brought to an end enables us to put upon them will, it may be hoped, be obvious. The first is from the *Annals of the Four Masters*<sup>1</sup> (A.D. 978):—

Mugroin, Abbot of Hy, scribe and bishop, *skilled in the three<sup>2</sup> verses* [died].

The second is from the “Colloquy of the Ancients,” a story preserved in several manuscripts, and among them the Book of Lismore<sup>3</sup>:—

To stay him therefore came Finn, in whose manner of staying an *églach* were special properties, one of them being that if on the mutineer he made *but three quatrains* he would incontinently become reconciled.

With this sentence we may well compare the account of the battle of Cúil Dremne in the same book, a portion of which is thus paraphrased by Mr Whitley Stokes<sup>4</sup>:—

The hostile armies meet at Cúil Dremne, and Diarmait's wizard makes an *airbe druid* (“druid's fence”) between the two armies. *Colomb cille chants three stanzas . . .* and one of his men overturns the druid's fence, leaps across it, and is at once killed. Battle is then joined, and Diarmait is beaten.

<sup>1</sup> O'Donovan renders the italicized words “the most learned of the three divisions”: the “three divisions” being Ireland, Mann, and Alba.

<sup>2</sup> Reeves (*Ecclesiastical Antiquities of Down*, etc., p. 134) supplies after “three” the words “kinds of.”

<sup>3</sup> S. H. O'Grady, *Silva Gallica*, ii. p. 202.

<sup>4</sup> *Lives of Saints from the Book of Lismore*, p. xxviii. sq.

#### NOTE TO CHAPTER VIII.

After these sheets had been printed off the writer received a kind communication from Miss Margaret Stokes, who has recently examined the device treated of in the following chapter. She has discovered near the Cross of Christ and His Apostles what seems to be an indication of the entrance to the cashel, reminding us, as she remarks, of the words "I am the door." This is a signal confirmation of Mr Olden's theory of the meaning of the device. A paper was lately read by Miss Stokes before the Royal Irish Academy on this device, and will appear, together with a facsimile (which will of course supersede the rough sketch on the opposite page), in the *Proceedings* of that Society.





sufficiently accurate for practical purposes. I have replaced the Irish characters by letters of a more familiar form, and in the writing outside the circles have inserted no letters or marks which I have not actually read, with more or less certainty.

In the manuscript the diameter of the inner circle is 3·6 centimetres, of the outer, 4·2 centimetres.

I now transcribe the various lines of writing, numbering them for convenience of reference, and conjecturally supplying illegible letters where it seems certain that such letters existed.

1. (Outer circle of writing).    + cros maire    [ande]s    + matt    aniar  
    + cros [io]han    [h]uaith    + cros lu[c - - ]  
    [anoi]r
2. (Inner circle of writing).    [ano]irdes + cros heremiæ et aniarles + daniel  
    et aniaruaid + eze[c]h[iel -]is[ - - a]n[o]irthu-  
    aid + cros [esaie]

Taking next the lines within the circles in their order we have—

3. +[c]ros ī spirta [n]oib
4. - - - - - gon danaib +
5. + - - æangleib anúas
6. U - - - - t.
7. +[c]rist conaapstalail
8. - - - - h - - s

1. 1. At the word [ande]s is a rent in the vellum, which the binders have remedied (?) by pasting a piece of paper over the word. It consists of about five letters and the tail of ī (s) is distinct. In very good light the last five letters of [h]uaith are almost certain.

1. 2. There are five or six letters after “ezechiel,” but “tis” is most uncertain, especially the two last letters; *t* may be *c*. See further below.

1. 5. The correct reading of the legible words was first given by Mr Whitley Stokes in the *Academy*, August 1, 1896, p. 82. I think I can see the cross at the beginning of the line, followed by about three letters now illegible: but these must be regarded as very uncertain.

The following is a translation :—

1. + Cross of Mark                    south                    + Matthew                    west  
      + cross of John                    north                    + cross of Luke                    east
2. On the south-east + cross of Jeremiah, and on the south-west + Daniel,  
      and on the north-west + Ezekiel [- - -], on the north-east + cross of  
      [Isaiah].
3. + Cross of the Holy Spirit.
4. - - - - - with gifts +
5. + - - with angels from above.
6. ?
7. + Christ with his apostles.
8. ?

The most obvious thing to remark about this device is that it is a map or plan of some kind. This is made quite clear by the writing outside the circles, in the inner line of which the positions of the pairs of crosses are marked as south-east, etc., while in the outer the cardinal points are noted. That our figure, then, is a map or plan appears to be certain, and this is almost the only fact which one can

hold to have been established with any strong probability as to its purpose and character. I mention it here for the sake of its bearing on a problem which at once suggests itself. At what point ought we to begin to read the two outer circles of writing (ll. 1, 2)?

In answer to this question, we observe, first of all, that two starting points are excluded: those, namely, which are marked as S.W. and N.W. respectively. The word "and," which in each of these cases precedes the designation of the position of the cross, at once disposes of their claim. Our choice, therefore, is limited to the S.E. and N.E. points. Taking the former, in reading line 1, we begin with the cross of Mark, and find the evangelists named in the order, Mark, Matthew, John, Luke. In the other case the order will be Luke, Mark, Matthew, John. Now in the Book of Mulling itself the Gospel of St John was certainly intended to be placed last, as we know from the fact that it is followed by the colophon. This may seem to decide in favour of beginning the reading with the cross of Luke, and it may appear, moreover, to yield evidence on the question of the order of the Synoptic Gospels in the Book of Mulling—of which, apart from this, we know nothing.

On the other hand, it must be observed that if this conclusion be correct, the order of the Gospels in our manuscript is most unusual<sup>1</sup>—absolutely unique, I believe, among Irish codices, which, with the exception of the Codex Usserianus, agree in this particular, in all recorded cases, with the A.V. Again, we must bear in mind that the device under consideration is a plan, and that the crosses marked on it, no doubt, represent actual stone or wooden crosses erected on the ground. Now it is probable that these crosses were planted in the order which the person who erected them was accustomed to regard as the correct order of the evangelists after whom they were named. But it is quite possible that, in setting up his crosses, he proceeded from right to left, while the scribe who indicated their places on his map could only write from left to right. If we reckon from right to left we get the conventional order Matthew, Mark, Luke, John, which appears much more likely than the other to have been that adopted by the scribe of our manuscript. The result of our argument, then, is this: The question to which we addressed ourselves is left unanswered; it is impossible to decide whether the scribe began ll. 1, 2 at the S.E. or N.E. point; but on the more important problem of the order of the Gospels in the Book of Mulling we have shed some little light: it must either have been Luke, Mark, Matthew, John, or Matthew, Mark, Luke, John, and more probably the latter. I shall presently adduce evidence which will, as I think, convert this probability into something very nearly approaching to certainty.

One other fact may be noted with reference to ll. 1, 2. It is

<sup>1</sup> The order, Luke, Mark, Matthew, John, is not mentioned by Gregory, *Prolegomena to Tischendorf's N.T.*, p. 137 sq.

obvious that some sort of parallelism is suggested between the four evangelists and certain Old Testament worthies—probably the four greater prophets. It is not very easy to guess what may have been the special features which suggested a comparison between St Mark and Jeremiah, between St Matthew and Daniel; but that the fashion of pairing together saints of different eras, “who were of one manner of life,” was congenial to the Celtic mind is manifest from the lists preserved in the Book of Leinster and elsewhere.<sup>1</sup> In these lists prominent Irish saints are compared with saints of the Universal Church, especially those mentioned in the New Testament.<sup>2</sup> It is quite possible that similar comparisons may have been instituted between saints of the Old and New Covenants, and that of these comparisons the device before us supplies one example.<sup>3</sup> Possibly those who are versed in the literature of the early Celtic Churches may be able to cite other similar instances.

I must content myself with a reference to one passage for a due appreciation of the importance of which the preceding paragraphs will have prepared us. It is the prayer of Colga Ua Duinechda, given in the Yellow Book of Lecan (T.C.D. II. 2. 16), col. 336.<sup>4</sup> This manuscript belongs to the fourteenth century, but the prayer is much older—probably contemporary with its reputed author, not long after whose death the Book of Mulling was written. This at least appears to be the view of Dr MacCarthy,<sup>5</sup> who gives the following translation<sup>6</sup> of its first two clauses:—

I beseech with Thee, O Jesus holy, thy four Evangelists who wrote thy Gospel divine, to wit, Matthew, Mark, Luke, John.

I beseech with Thee thy four chief prophets who foretold thy Incarnation, Daniel, and Jeremias, and Isaías and Ezechiel.

The whole structure of the prayer makes it clear that, by naming in succession the evangelists and the major prophets, the writer intended to suggest a parallel between them. The prayer is, in fact, made up of a long series of pairings of the same kind. Thus, in the three following clauses we have the nine grades of the heavenly

<sup>1</sup> First printed by Todd, *L. II.*, i. 69 sq. Compare Olden, *The Church of Ireland*, in the “National Churches” series, p. 425; Stokes, *Martyrology of Gorman*, p. xvii.

<sup>2</sup> It is worthy of remark that one Old Testament saint—“Job of the Patience”—is mentioned.

<sup>3</sup> It must not, however, be supposed that comparisons between the evangelists and the major prophets are peculiarly Celtic. Examples are in fact numerous in mediæval art. See Berger, *L'Histoire de la Vulgate*, pp. 210, 248, 296; and especially Mrs Jameson, *Sacred and Legendary Art*, 7th ed., vol. i. p. 140. Cf. also Ebner, *Quellen und Forschungen zur Geschichte und Kunstgeschichte des Missale Romanum in Mittelalter*; *Iter Italicum*, p. 407, sqq.

<sup>4</sup> The Prayer is found also in the Brussels MS., 5100-4. Stokes, *Martyrology of Gorman*, p. ix.

<sup>5</sup> *Trans. R.I.A.*, xxvii. 156.

<sup>6</sup> *Ib.*, p. 178. Mr Whitley Stokes (*ib. sup.*) translates the first clause somewhat differently: “I appeal to Thee, thou holy Jesus, by the four evangelists,” etc. But our argument is not affected by the variation in rendering.



and earthly churches set over against each other, and immediately afterwards the twelve patriarchs, the twelve minor prophets, and the twelve apostles, etc.

Next let us observe that the evangelists are named in the usual order, which we have already concluded to be probably that of the Book of Mulling, viz.: Matthew, Mark, Luke, John. Moreover, the prophets are named in the order, Daniel, Jeremiah, Isaiah, Ezekiel. This can only be because, the evangelists being compared individually with the prophets, Matthew corresponded to Daniel, Mark to Jeremiah, Luke to Isaiah, and John to Ezekiel; or because, the two groups being compared together as groups, Daniel, Jeremiah, etc., was the customary order of the greater prophets in Bibles of the period. In either case, Daniel standing under Matthew in our figure and Jeremiah under Mark, we may safely infer that Isaiah stood under Luke and Ezekiel under John. When we turn back to the MS. we find this conjecture verified in the case of Ezekiel (as shown above l. 2), though none of the letters of this name could have been read without the assistance of the hint derived from Colga's Prayer.

But further, this prayer helps us a good deal towards understanding the purpose of the exterior pairs of crosses. They must be equivalent to an invocation of prophets and evangelists. On the hypothesis that the device is a plan, we may well believe that the erection represented by the circles and the interior crosses was, as it were, placed under their protection by planting round it crosses in their honour. And here it may not be amiss to quote, by way of illustration, the closing words of the Prayer of St John the Evangelist<sup>1</sup>: "amen matheus marcus lucas iohannes." On which Dr Todd remarks, "This is a curious example of the ancient custom of invoking the names of the Evangelists, as a protection against evil."

Yet again, there can now remain no doubt as to the order in which the crosses were erected: whoever planted them proceeded "left-wise"—*i.e.*, in a direction contrary to the diurnal course of the sun.<sup>2</sup> We should certainly not have expected this. The Cathach of the O'Donnells was to be "sent thrice *right-wise* round the army of the Cinell Conaill" in order that they might be assured of victory in battle.<sup>3</sup> And, to take an instance which, as will presently appear, is even more to our purpose, when the angel Victor marked out the site of the future Church of Armagh "He went *right-hand-wise* round the rampart, and Patrick behind him with his Bachall Isu in his hand, and Ireland's elders a-chanting around him."<sup>4</sup> But, indeed, refer-

<sup>1</sup> *L.H.*, ii. 270 (l. 91).

<sup>2</sup> A fact which was pointed out to me by the Hon. John Abercromby.

<sup>3</sup> O'Donnell, quoted by Reeves, *Vit. Col.*, p. 250.

<sup>4</sup> Lebar Brece Homily on St Patrick, Stokes, *Tripartite Life*, ii. p. 472 *sqq.* Mr Stokes' account of the practice here exemplified is scarcely justified by the evidence. He seems (*op. cit.*, i. p. clxxii) to class it as a method of showing

ences to the right-hand turn in Irish literature are very numerous.<sup>1</sup> The left-hand turn is less frequently alluded to, but some examples may be cited.

In the story of Cuchulainn's death<sup>2</sup> we are told that "Cuchulainn went to him (his horse). And *thrice did the horse turn his left side to his master . . .* Then Cuchulainn reproached his horse, saying that he was not wont thus to deal with his master . . . And Leborcham met him and besought him not to leave them . . . But he *turned his chariot to the right*" and proceeded on his way. Further on, somewhat similar omens of his approaching death are related.

Again in the "Scél Baili Binnbértaig"<sup>3</sup> we read: "They saw the horrible apparition (?) of a man coming towards them from the south . . . *His left was towards the land.*"

Once more, the Book of Ballymote, f. 361a, has the following story<sup>4</sup>:—"Through pride, once on a time Boamn (well knowing the well's virtue) said that there existed not any occult power able to deform her beauty, and so visited the spring: thrice she walked left-handed round it; whereupon out of it three volumes of water spout forth over her and despoil her of a thigh, an arm, and one eye; then to hide her disgrace she turned away and fled sea-ward, the water following her to the estuary of the Boyne."

Fourthly, the Book of Rights<sup>5</sup> mentions as one of the five prohibitions of the King of Laighin (Leinster), "To go round Tuath Laighean left-hand-wise on Wednesday."

And lastly, in the narrative of the Siege of Howth<sup>6</sup> we find the reverence, and says that it consists in walking "with the right hand towards the person or thing to be honoured."

<sup>1</sup> Besides those mentioned in the text I have observed the following: The right-hand circuit of Ireland is mentioned in *Egert.* 1782 (O'Grady, *Silva Gadelica*, ii. 86), in the Book of Ballymote (*O'Grady*, ii. 374) in the poem "The Circuit of Ireland by Muireheartach MacNeill," and in the legendary tale prefixed to it in O'Donovan's Edition, p. 21; a saint walks right-wise round an army to give it victory, Stokes' *Lives of Saints from Book of Lismore*, p. 240 (cf. the hag's song in *Egert.* 1782, O'Grady, ii. p. 434, and that of Caeille in the Book of Lismore, O'Grady, ii. 210); Senan and the angels consecrate an island by going round it right-hand-wise (Stokes, *op. cit.*, p. 214). While apparently the right hand turn, as distinct from the right hand circuit is referred to in the Yellow Book of Lecan, col. 690 sq. (*Revue Celtique*, ii. 198), in the "Voyage of Snedgus and Mac Riagla" from the same book (*Rev. Celt.*, ix. 19), in the "Colloquy of the Ancients" from the Book of Lismore (O'Grady, ii. 262), in the Life of Fíndehua from the same (Stokes, *op. cit.*, p. 236), in the Tripartite Life of St Patrick (Stokes' *Tripartite Life*, p. 39) and in the parallel passage of the Lebar Brecc Homily on St Patrick (Stokes, *op. cit.*, p. 453). On the whole subject see Sir Samuel Ferguson, *On the Ceremonial Turn called "Desiul"* (*Proceedings R. I. A.*, 2nd ser., Ant. I. p. 355), and Stokes, *Lives of Saints from Book of Lismore*, pp. 348, 405 sq. Cf. also W. Simpson, *The Buddhist Praying Wheel*. No doubt many other instances might be added.

<sup>2</sup> Abridged from the Book of Leinster by Mr W. Stokes, *Revue Celtique*, iii. 175.

<sup>3</sup> From Harl. 5280, f. 48a; *Rev. Celt.*, xiii. 224.

<sup>4</sup> S. H. O'Grady, *Silva Gadelica*, ii. p. 520. The same story is narrated in the Bodleian *Dinnshenchas*, 36 (*Folk-Lore*, vol. iii. p. 34).

<sup>5</sup> O'Donovan's Edition, p. 3. So in the Edinburgh *Dinnshenchas*, 68, one of the "three tabus of Taitiu" is "looking at it over one's left shoulder when coming from it" (*Folk-Lore*, iv. 69).

<sup>6</sup> From the Book of Leinster, pp. 114b-117a; *Revue Celtique*, viii. 49.

following: "In Ireland there dwelt a hard, merciless man, to wit, Atherne the Urgent of Ulster . . . He was so called from going by Conor's counsel, on a (bardic) circuit. This is the way he went at first, *left-hand-wise about Ireland* till he made the round of Con-naught," etc.

These passages may suffice to show that the left-hand circuit was regarded as presaging evil. Our attempt, whatever it may be worth, to explain the fact that it is depicted in our manuscript must be postponed to a later stage of the present inquiry.

A slight difficulty remains to be noticed. The extract from Colga has enabled us to read the name of Ezekiel under that of St John; but we might have expected to find the word Ezekiel without any addition, just as we have Daniel and Jeremiah. On the contrary, between "ezechiel" and "anoir" there are about six letters, namely, 't' (or 'c') and (but these are very doubtful) 'is'—this group of three being preceded and followed by one or two which are illegible. This may be the name of a second person coupled with Ezekiel, or more probably a descriptive epithet of the latter. What the epithet may be I am unable to guess.

But to proceed. We have seen that the device under consideration is a map or plan. But a map, we at once ask, of what? To this question I can give no answer which commends itself to me as altogether satisfactory. A suggestion, however, which has been made to me by Mr Olden is plausible, and at least deserves mention. He is inclined to think that the circles represent the Rath of St Molling, within which were his ecclesiastical buildings; the concentric circles perhaps indicating a double or even triple rampart, as in many royal residences. The settlement of an ecclesiastic, he says, his "*calhair, civitas*," was exactly like that of a native chieftain, except that it would be furnished with crosses as an indication of its purpose. In support of this statement he kindly refers me to the *Life of St Fintan or Munnu*, in which we read that, when the Saint was in the woods (in the Barony of Forth, Co. Wexford), he saw three men, clothed in white garments, who told him, "Here will be your city," and they marked out in his presence seven places, in which afterwards the chief buildings of his city should be erected, and Fintan placed crosses there.<sup>1</sup>

All this is very interesting. It suggests that the crosses in our diagram mark the sites of monastic buildings<sup>2</sup> at St Mullins; and if this can be established, the diagram itself will, it would almost seem, lead to the further inference that the buildings within the rampart were dedicated, like modern churches, to the Persons of the Blessed Trinity, or to the Saints.

<sup>1</sup> *Dict. of National Biography*, xix. p. 43, cf. Olden, *Church of Ireland*, p. 57.

<sup>2</sup> It is no argument against this theory that one of the buildings (represented by the cross in l. 3) must have been actually in the vallum. See the curious plan of the monastery on Oilean-Tsenach in Lord Dunraven's *Notes on Irish Architecture*, vol. i., p. 33.

Let us endeavour then to test the hypothesis by any evidence which may be available in addition to the Life of St Fintan to which allusion has been just now made.

The first remark to be made is that the theory which it suggests as to the meaning of the interior crosses is confirmed by several passages which appear to indicate that it was quite usual to mark the site of a church by a cross, either incised in stone, or erected in the ground, exactly as Fintan is represented to have done. According to the life in the Book of Lismore, this would seem to have been the ordinary habit of St Columba, though the sentences now to be quoted<sup>1</sup> are not free from ambiguity. It will be noticed that the number of crosses sained by him is exactly equal to the number of churches which he founded.

"Many then were the churches he (Colum Cille) marked out, and the books he wrote, to wit, three hundred churches and three hundred books . . . Colomb founded a church in the place where Swords standeth to-day. And he left an ancient man of his household there, even Finan the Feeble, and he left the gospel which his own hand had written. Then he marked out the well named Sord, that is 'pure,' and sained a cross. For it was his wont to make crosses, and writing-tablets, and book-satchels, and other church-gear. Now he sained three hundred crosses, and three hundred wells and a hundred tablets, and a hundred croziers, and a hundred satchels."

St Patrick's practice, as early tradition represents it, appears to have been similar to that of the later Saint. Let us take for instance the following from Tirechan's collections in the Book of Armagh<sup>2</sup> :—

"Et perrexit Patricius ad fontem qui dicitur Muena, et fecit Cellam Senes quae sic uocatur. Et fuit Secundinus solus sub ulmo frondosso separatim. Et est signum crucis in eo loco usque in hunc diem."

The last sentence seems to refer to a cross marked on the ground as an indication of the site of the church which was afterwards to be built. And in this interpretation of the words we are confirmed by several passages in the Tripartite Life and Book of Armagh, of which I quote one,<sup>3</sup> giving the references to the others in the footnote.<sup>4</sup>

"Then Patrick founded a cloister at A'th Maigne in Asal. A merciless man resisted him there . . . Patrick marked out with his crozier a cross in the flagstone, and cut the stone as if it were soft clay."

Sometimes, however, the Saint erected a standing cross. Witness this passage from Tirechan<sup>5</sup> :—

"Et eeee quidam uir uenit ad illos, nomine Mace Dregin, cum filiis septem gentilibus . . . et elegit unum filium ex ipsis cui nomen erat

<sup>1</sup> Stokes, *Lives of Saints from the Book of Lismore*, p. 176 sq.

<sup>2</sup> Stokes, *Tripartite Life*, ii. p. 321. The story is told also in the Tripartite Life (i. p. 111.).

<sup>3</sup> Stokes, *op. cit.*, i. p. 79.

<sup>4</sup> Stokes, *op. cit.*, p. 137, 337.

<sup>5</sup> Book of Armagh, f. 14 b. 2 (Stokes, *op. cit.* ii. p. 326).

Mace Ercae . . . Extendit manum et indicavit ei locum in quo sunt ossa eius procul, et digito suo signavit locum et *crucem posuit ibi*.”

To which may be added, perhaps, a passage in the Tripartite Life<sup>1</sup> in which it is stated that in each of two places where St Patrick intended that monasteries should be established he “set a stake.”

Then, when we turn from the interior to the exterior crosses, we find, in the first place, evidence that crosses were actually planted without the rampart in ancient ecclesiastical establishments. Thus we learn from the late Sir W. R. Wilde<sup>2</sup> that at St Kieran’s Church, three miles from Kells, in the County Meath, there were five termon crosses remains of which are still preserved *in situ*, while tradition adds that there were originally eight. Four of those which survive are at the cardinal points, and we may infer that some store was set by this arrangement of the crosses, as that one which stood to the north of the Church was actually planted in the bed of the river. The Church of St Kieran must have presented a very remarkable analogy to that of St Molling with its eight exterior crosses carefully set at such points of the compass as to divide the circular rath into quadrants—if indeed our circular device really represents the monastery at Tech Molling.

From the Four Masters (A.D. 1070) we gather that Clonmacnoise also, St Kieran’s principal foundation, had its exterior crosses.

And that the custom exemplified in these instances prevailed widely is shown by the direction of the *Hibernensis*:<sup>3</sup> “Terminus sancti loci habeat signa circa se . . . Ubicunque inveneritis signum crucis Christi, ne laeseritis.”

Once again, that some of these exterior crosses should have been dedicated to the Evangelists agrees exactly with what we know from other sources. I cannot indeed produce evidence of as early date as the Book of Mulling, but the last entry under the year 1225 in the Annals of Lough Cé<sup>4</sup> is worthy of our attention:

“Maelbrighde O’Maicin, abbot of Tobur-Patraic, in Christo quievit. He was a virgin and sage; and it was by him the church of Tobur-Patraic was begun, and its sanctuary and crosses were diligently finished, in honour of Patrick, and Mary, and the Apostle John.”

And so too at Iona many crosses have been destroyed, and yet among the four which remain, two are named after the evangelists St Matthew and St John.<sup>5</sup>

In one other respect these exterior crosses agree with the analogy supplied by the remains of a monastic establishment. There exist

<sup>1</sup> Stokes, i. p. 149 sq. For a different explanation, see Olden, *Church of Ireland*, p. 57, and compare O’Curry, *Lectures*, p. 59.

<sup>2</sup> *The Beauties of the Boyne and Blackwater*, p. 138 sq. This passage and several of those which are cited hereafter were brought under my notice by Mr Olden.

<sup>3</sup> xliv. 3. Wasserscheleben, *Die Irische Kanonensammlung*, Leipzig. 1885, p. 175.

<sup>4</sup> Hennessy, i. p. 291.

<sup>5</sup> Reeves, *Vit. Col.*, p. 419 sqq.

in the island of Ardilaun or Ardoileán, off the coast of Galway, some very interesting ruins, surrounded by a cashel, unfortunately in a very imperfect state. Thirty years ago, however, when it was examined and described<sup>1</sup> by Mr G. Henry Kinahan, it was much more nearly in its original condition, and Mr Kinahan has placed it on record that the rampart had three doorways, facing respectively south-east, north-east, and south-west.<sup>2</sup> Of course it is possible, and one is inclined to think probable, that there had also been a north-west doorway, which in the broken state of the cashel Mr Kinahan was unable to observe. We return now to our diagram, and we find its four pairs of protecting crosses exactly at these points of the rampart. May we suppose that these also were the entrances to the enclosure? Certainly nothing could be more natural than that at the very gates of the monastery should be placed the protecting crosses dedicated to the four evangelists and the four prophets. St Fechin of Fore was probably not singular in having a cross at the door of his church.<sup>3</sup>

Up to this point all the evidence adduced has gone to support the hypothesis of Mr Olden. It has been shown that the external crosses are in their number, dedication, and position, just such as might have been found outside the rath of an ancient Celtic monastery. It has been shown too that there is nothing impossible in the supposition that the interior crosses indicate the positions of the monastic buildings within the enclosure.

Nevertheless, before producing what appears to us a further very striking and cogent argument in favour of it, we may be allowed to suggest a slight modification. In all that has been said we have assumed, or as we may perhaps rather affirm, by all that has been said we have proved that the exterior crosses do *not* represent buildings, but actual crosses of wood or stone erected on the ground. Now it must be regarded as *prima facie* likely that the crosses outside and inside the circles denote similar objects. Why then assume that those found within the circle represent buildings? We have certainly proved that this is possible, but we have not proved that it is probable. It may just as well have been that they were simply standing crosses erected for any of the other purposes, for which in ancient times crosses were used—such as to mark a grave,<sup>4</sup> or to serve as a memorial of some striking event.<sup>5</sup> That crosses stood thus in ancient monasteries we cannot doubt.<sup>6</sup>

And now, this being said, it remains to point out that Mr Olden's conjecture has received a very considerable accession of probability

<sup>1</sup> *Proceedings of the Royal Irish Academy*, x. p. 551 sqq.

<sup>2</sup> So too Dundesert cashel had "two complete entrances, one north-west, the other south-east": Reeves, *Ecclesiastical Antiquities*, p. 181.

<sup>3</sup> See Colgan, as referred to in note 6.

<sup>4</sup> Stokes' *Tripartite Life*, p. 325 (Book of Armagh, f. 14 a. l.).

<sup>5</sup> Stokes, *op. cit.*, p. 276 (Book of Armagh, f. 3 a. l.), Reeves' *Vit. Col.*, pp. 88, 231.

<sup>6</sup> See Colgan, *AA.SS.* Jan. 22, cap. 23, p. 135, quoted by Petrie, *Round Towers*, p. 172; Reeves' *Vit. Col.*, p. 269; Stokes' *Calendar of Oengus*, p. 4.

since it was first proposed. For at that time line 5 of the writing had not been read. Mr Whitley Stokes, with an acuteness which one who has made many vain attempts to discover their meaning can thoroughly appreciate, informs us that the much worn letters spell the words "conaingleib anias" = "with angels from above." I fancy I can now see before this phrase the traces of a few letters and the faint marks of a cross. At any rate, it is most reasonable to surmise that if, as we have shown, our device is a map, these words indicate the spot where an apparition of angels was seen. Fortunately we know of two visions of angels, both of which occurred in the very place which *ex hypothesi* the device represents, and either of which was of quite sufficient importance to be dignified with a memorial cross if any tradition existed as to the spot where it occurred.

In proof of this statement let me ask attention to two passages, the first translated by Mr Whitley Stokes from the Book of Leinster,<sup>1</sup> the other kindly rendered for me by Mr Olden from the Brussels life of St Molling.<sup>2</sup> They run thus :

"Find [*i.e.* Mac Cumall] arose and his warriors along with him. And they set forward with their left hand to [the river] Barrow to the point of Ross Bruice<sup>3</sup> over Barrow. The royal champion sat down on a ridge<sup>4</sup> over the wood (*ross*). He beheld a host melodious, floating, in bands ascending to heaven and descending (Gen. xxviii. 12). What host is yon? say the Fian. Those are angels (says Find) even the household of the King of heaven and earth, and shavelings (*talciul*) will come here in the place in which yon angels are." Subsequently a warrior named Enan has a vision in which he sees the clerics just referred to, namely "[Saint] Molling with his community afterwards."

"He (Molling) went to Shlabh Mairge and from that went southward and beheld a watch of angels on the point of Ross Broce over the stream pools of the Barrow."

If either of these visions of angels gives the key to the meaning of the fifth line of our inscription, we have proof that the structure of which a plan lies before us was situated on a ridge at St Mullins, and that the spot to which this line refers was within the rath of St Molling's monastery. And indeed, apart from the passages quoted, a similar explanation of the words "with angels from above" might have

<sup>1</sup> *Revue Celtique*, xiii. 45, 49.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. *Dict. of Nat. Biog.*, xiii. p. 380.

<sup>3</sup> "The wood of the badger," another name for the place now known as St Mullins.

<sup>4</sup> The expressions here used exactly describe the site of St Molling's monastery. It is situated in the angle formed by the junction of a small stream with the Barrow. This is no doubt the "point of Ross Broce." The existing ruins are crowded together on an elevation at a considerable height above the river and about 150 yards from it, fitly described as the "ridge over Barrow." See Ordnance Survey Map, Co. Carlow, Sheet 26. It will be observed that almost identical phrases are found in the two passages given in the text.

been suggested, since stories of the places in which monasteries were to be erected being indicated by angelic visitations are not uncommon. An example which readily occurs to one is the story of Iarlaithe, to whom the "place of his resurrection" was pointed out by St Brenainn. "Then," we are told,<sup>1</sup> "the twain made this lay between them, while gazing at the grave-yard and the train of angels manifestly (rising) from it. And Brenainn spake the first five stanzas, and then Iarlaithe spake :

"Lofty the grave-yard of the splendid angels."

We are now perhaps in a position to make some attempt to explain the left-hand circuit of St Molling, or whoever else planted the crosses in honour of the evangelists, which has already attracted our attention as a difficulty to be solved. We have advanced so far as to be able to regard the supposition that our figure represents a monastery as at least on the level of a working hypothesis. That being so we might have expected St Molling to proceed, like the Angel Victor and St Patrick at Armagh, "right-handwise round the rampart;" why did he go in the opposite direction? A sufficient answer may possibly be suggested by the able paper of Sir Samuel Ferguson "on the Ceremonial Turn called *Desiul*" already referred to.<sup>2</sup> That writer quotes some perplexing words from the twenty-eighth book of Pliny's *Natural History*, of the meaning of which commentators had failed to give a satisfactory account: "In adorando dextram ad osculum referimus totumque corpus circumagimus, quod in *lervum fecisse Galli religiosus credunt.*" Are we to take this as a statement that the Gauls practised the left-hand turn in religious ceremonies, and so differed from the Romans? If so Pliny's evidence contradicts what we know from other sources. Accordingly, Sir Samuel Ferguson interprets the word "religiosus" in the sense of "unlucky, ominous, inauspicious, forbidden, uncanny," and translates: "which the Gauls deem it a direful thing to do left-hand ways." "In other words," he proceeds, "the turn which was usually practised towards the right by the Romans, was sometimes, on occasions of imprecatory or malignant appeals to the gods, practised by the Gauls to the left."<sup>3</sup> Perhaps this is the meaning of the left-hand circuit of St Molling. The monastery is placed under the protection of the Apostles and Evangelists by the erection of the crosses, while vengeance is called down upon those who may violate it by the procession

<sup>1</sup> Stokes, *Lives of Saints from the Book of Lismore*, p. 251 sq. Cf. also pp. 164, 285 sq. Another instance will be found in the *Prophecy of Art Son of Conn* (*Proceedings of R. I. A.*, 1895, p. 533). Con sees "the going and coming of the angels up and down" at Trevit. Following up this vision he predicts the foundation of a monastery there by St Lonan.

<sup>2</sup> Above p. 172, note 2.

<sup>3</sup> Compare Brown's *Life and Legend of Sir Michael Scott*, Edinburgh, 1897, p. 182.



against the course of the sun.<sup>1</sup> But whether Sir Samuel Ferguson's explanation of Pliny's remark is correct or not, the remark itself may be cited as a parallel to that which has caused us difficulty, and so as removing the difficulty, so far as is necessary for our purpose that it should be removed.

But now what appears to the writer a more serious difficulty must be dealt with. Is it probable, it may be asked, that the monastery would be exactly circular, as on the supposition that our diagram is its ground-plan it must have been?

Now, I am well aware that by many the difficulty here stated will not be felt to be a difficulty at all. Eminent and accurate writers have made the general assertion<sup>2</sup> that the vallum in Irish monasteries "was of a circular figure." Those who accept this statement will, of course, reply to the question just now proposed that the circles in our diagram are exactly what might have been expected. So far from being a difficulty to be overcome, they are an argument in favour of Mr Olden's hypothesis. It is necessary for us, therefore, at once to state, and to give some reasons for, our belief that in most cases Irish monasteries were not circular in shape.

Literary evidence on such a subject is, naturally, not abundant. And to examine with any degree of fulness that which is supplied by the remains still existing of ancient ecclesiastical establishments is, in the space at our command, impossible. It may suffice to accept the evidence adduced by the learned writer of *The Ecclesiastical Architecture of Ireland*. "It is clear," he says,<sup>3</sup> "that in the earliest monastic establishments in Ireland, the abbot, clergy, and monks had each their separate cells, which served them as habitations, and that such other houses, as the house for the accommodation of strangers, the kitchen, etc., were all separate edifices, surrounded by a cashel or *circular wall*, and forming a kind of monastery or ecclesiastical town, like those of the early Christians in the East, and known among the Egyptians by the name of *Laura*." A few pages further on<sup>4</sup> he proceeds, "In the western and southern portions of the island, in which the custom of building with stone seems to have prevailed far more generally [than elsewhere], we have still remaining abundant examples, not only of such detached monastic habitations, but of all the other buildings necessary in these early establishments." Several of the pages of the section of Mr Petrie's great work, from which these sentences have been extracted, are occupied with descriptions of some of the ancient monastic remains—five in number—which had come under

<sup>1</sup> Compare the Annals of the Four Masters, A.D., 1162. "Caiseal-an-urlair was erected by the successor of Columcille, who pronounced a curse against anyone that should come over it."

<sup>2</sup> Reeves' *Vit. Col.*, p. 361; Petrie, *Ordnance Survey of the County of Londonderry*, i. 213; Stuart, *Book of Deer*, p. cxlv.

<sup>3</sup> Petrie, *Ecclesiastical Architecture*, p. 416.

<sup>4</sup> P. 418.

his own observation. The first of these is the monastery on Ardoileán, or High Island, an island in the Atlantic, about two miles from the coast of Connemara. "This monastery," says Dr Petrie,<sup>1</sup> "is surrounded by an uncemented stone wall, *nearly circular*, enclosing an area of one hundred and eight feet in diameter." On the same page he speaks of it as "the great circular wall;" and similar language has been used quite recently by Mr R. A. S. Macalister.<sup>2</sup> Fortunately, however, the cashel had been inspected by Mr O'Donovan, and his words,<sup>3</sup> though somewhat contradictory *inter se*, have the merit of substituting accurate figures for general descriptions: "The large round wall . . . is nearly an oblong, measuring in length from north to south 38 yards, and in breadth, from east to west, 23 yards . . . The most perfect part of it [is] near the N. W. corner." (!) A wall with such measurements can be termed circular only by an abuse of language. It certainly could not be represented by a circle in a plan.

Dr Petrie's second instance of a "circular enclosure," of which remains existed in the early years of this century, is that in the great island of Aran. Its shape he does not mention, possibly because at the time of his visit this could not be ascertained on account of the ruinous condition of the cashel.

He next refers to the cashel surrounding the ecclesiastical establishment of St Molaise in the island of Inishmurry. This, he tells us,<sup>4</sup> "is of an *irregular* round form, and nearly 200 feet in its *greatest* internal diameter." From this it is clear that it could not be represented in a plan by a circle. It is, in fact, more truly described as pear-shaped than as circular.<sup>5</sup>

Of the remains of the monastery at Glendalough, Dr Petrie says,<sup>6</sup> "Of the cashel, or wall itself, which enclosed the monastic establishment, there are but slight vestiges remaining, but these are sufficient to show that it was built without cement, and of a very irregular figure, in consequence of the inequality of the surface along which it passed, and the great extent of the area which it enclosed." And he then passes to the establishment at Clonmacnoise, on which he remarks that "from a ground-plan preserved among Sir James Ware's MSS. in the British Museum, we find that the wall which surrounded the churches and cemetery at Clonmacnoise was equally irregular in its figure as that at Glendalough; and from a similar cause,—the inequality of the surface over which it passed; but as cement was used in its construction, there is little doubt that it was of much later age than that of Glendalough."

<sup>1</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 420.

<sup>2</sup> *Journal of Royal Society of Antiquaries of Ireland* for 1896, p. 202.

<sup>3</sup> Ordnance Survey MSS., quoted by Mr Macalister, p. 209 *sq.*

<sup>4</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 445.

<sup>5</sup> See the plan in Lord Dunraven's *Notes on Irish Architecture*, vol. i, p. 44. Lord Dunraven remarks (p. 45) that the irregularity in the shape of this cashel "is not to be accounted for by the nature of the ground."

<sup>6</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. 446.

Thus of the five examples of ancient cashels mentioned by Dr Petrie not one is proved to have been circular, and four were of a different figure. Other instances might be added, such as the monastery on Skellig Michael,<sup>1</sup> but what has been said is sufficient to show that circular cashels were not so common as has been sometimes assumed to be the case.<sup>2</sup> Are we then to infer that the circles in our figure cannot be supposed, after all, to represent the cashel of a monastery? By no means. For, whatever view may be held as to the normal shape of the vallum, I believe that several instances of monasteries which were undoubtedly circular, may be cited.

I do not care to press the case of the *civitas* of St Cuthbert, in Farne Island, which is described for us by Bede<sup>3</sup> in these words,—“*Condidit civitatem suo aptam imperio, et domos in hac acque civitati congruas exexit. Est autem aedificium situ pene rotundum*” etc. It manifestly approximated to the round form, but whether closely enough to warrant its representation by a circle we cannot say. Not much more to our purpose is the description of the Ferta laid out by St Patrick at Armagh, preserved in the Tripartite Life:<sup>4</sup> “The enclosure was 140 feet, the great house 27, the kitchen 17, and the oratory 7.” For, notwithstanding the acute remark of Dr Todd, that both enclosure and buildings were of a form for the measurement of which one dimension was sufficient,<sup>5</sup> it scarcely follows that they were exactly circular. We must not attribute to the description the accuracy of an engineer’s specification.

But a more cogent instance is at hand. Adamnan, in the title of

<sup>1</sup> Lord Dunraven’s *Notes*, i. p. 30. Compare also the Cashel on Oilean-Tsenach, p. 38. Reeves (*Ecclesiastical Antiquities*, p. 196) mentions a triple oval cashel in Mahee Island, Strangford Lough, and (p. 182) the Cashel of Dun-Desert, which departed so far from the round form that it is described as only “nearly circular” by one who made his report sixty years after every trace of it had been swept away, and who does not seem to have been quite accurate in the few measurements which he gives. A Scottish example is the cashel in Skye, described by Dr J. Anderson in his *Scotland in Early Christian Times*, First Series, p. 94.

<sup>2</sup> In dealing with this question I have preferred direct investigation of the evidence to an appeal to authority: none the less so since the opinion of experts must be admitted to be far from being unanimously favourable to the view which I have ventured to express. I cannot, however, refrain from quoting a sentence or two from the essay with which Miss Margaret Stokes’ sumptuous edition of the *Notes on Irish Architecture* of the late Earl of Dunraven concludes: “The resemblance,” she remarks (vol. ii. p. 136), “between the pagan and ecclesiastical fort is so strong and so significant of the same primitive condition of knowledge in the builders, that some comparative study of both monuments is required before those points of difference are discovered which may prevent us from falling into the error of supposing that all the monastic forts were originally pagan and afterwards converted to Christian uses. . . . In the first place, the pagan fortress is composed of two and sometimes three areas or wards, the interior, or fort proper, being either an oval, a circle, or half an ellipse, but with no sign of variation in the ground plan which would suggest that it was meant to enclose structures already in existence; whereas the Christian fort deviates from the regular oval or circular form so as to take in the oratories and other buildings it is intended to protect.”

<sup>3</sup> *Vit. Cuth.*, xvii.

<sup>4</sup> W. Stokes, p. 237.

<sup>5</sup> *St Patrick, Apostle of Ireland*, p. 478.

the fifteenth chapter of the third book of his *Vita Columbae*, mentions a certain brother who fell “de monasterii culmine rotundi<sup>1</sup> in Roboreti Campo,”—from the roof of the *round monastery* at Durrow. In the account of the incident in the text (which is taken from Cumminian), the brother is said to have fallen “de summo culmine magnæ domus . . . quæ his in diebus in Roboreti Campo fabricatur.” The two phrases evidently describe the same building. What was it? Petrie,<sup>2</sup> followed by Reeves and Fowler,<sup>3</sup> has little doubt that it was the Round Tower of the Monastery. Mr Whitley Stokes,<sup>4</sup> on the other hand, and apparently with greater probability, identifies it with the *tech mor* or “great house.” The three later writers, however, in this advancing a step beyond Petrie, identify the “magna domus” with the “monasterium rotundum.” This is, I venture to think, unnecessary and unwarranted. Nowhere else in Adamnan is the word “monasterium” applied to a single building of the *civitas*, and du Cange gives no instance of the word used in this sense. Even at iii. 8 the “fratrum monasteria,” which at first view might appear to mean the cells of the monks, are shown by the context to be several monasteries in the Island of Tiree, in one of which lived the “congregatio” of Baithene. “Monasterium,” therefore, in the present passage must have the same meaning, unless it is impossible so to take it. I conclude that in “monasterii culmen rotundi,” occurring as it does, in the heading of a chapter, where we might expect to meet compendious phrases, we have a short way of expressing “culmen domus quæ in monasterio rotundo est.” The building so described was certainly high (“magna,” “major,” “altissima,” “enormis,” so high that a fall from it meant almost certain death; see Reeves, *ul. loc.*); it was probably or possibly round; but the thing which concerns us is, that the monastery at Durrow, with which it was connected, was round,<sup>5</sup> like the monastery, if such it was, depicted in our manuscript.

<sup>1</sup> With most unusual inaccuracy Reeves has in his glossary “monasterii culmen rotundum.” He was probably misled by Petrie’s argument: “Not certainly that the monastery itself had a rotund roof,” etc. Certainly not, but there is no mention of a “rotund roof” in the Latin.

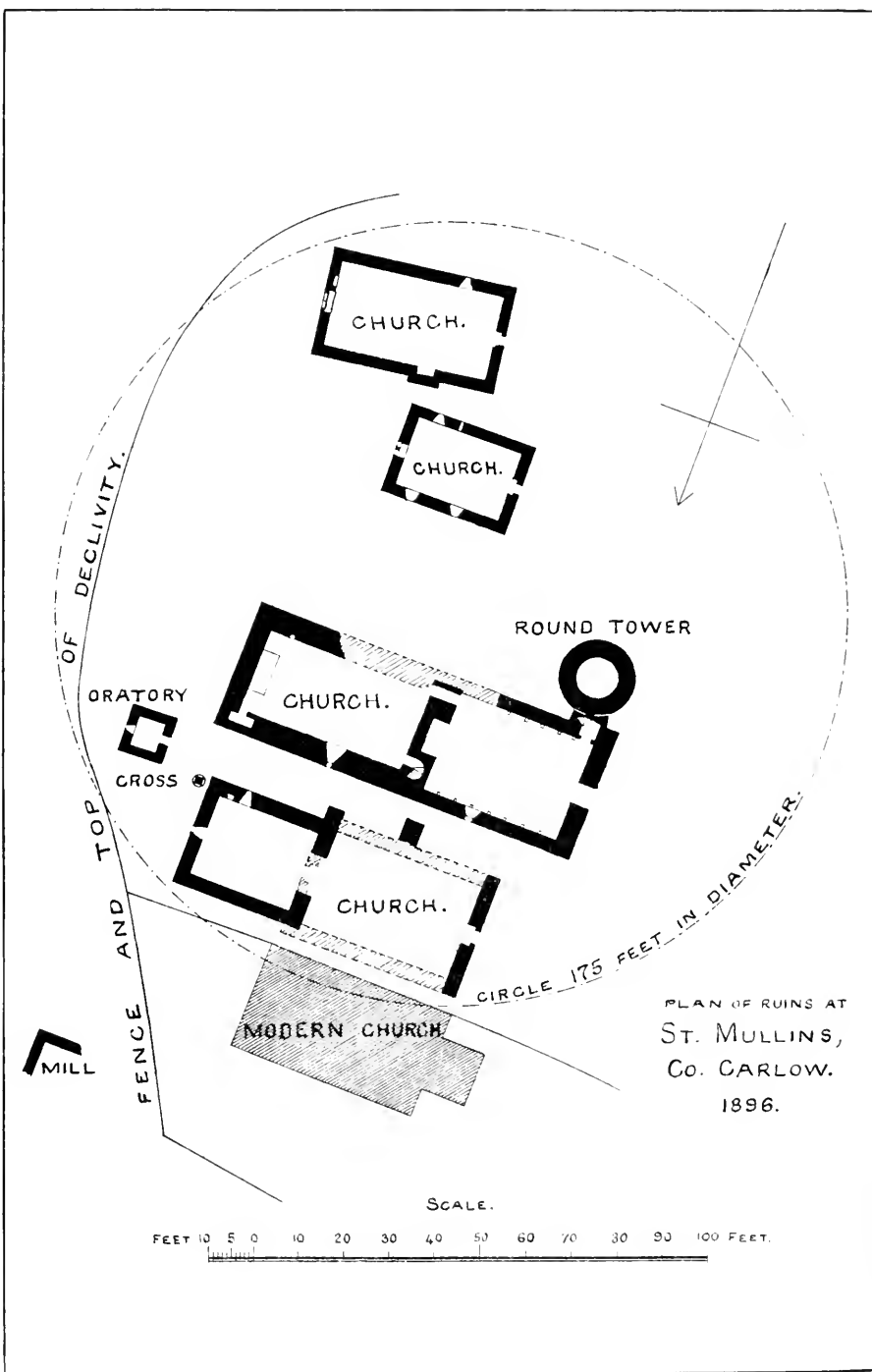
<sup>2</sup> *Ecclesiastical Architecture*, p. 382 sqq.

<sup>3</sup> *Adamnani Vita S. Columbae*, Oxford, 1894, p. 144.

<sup>4</sup> *Tripartite Life*, p. elv, *Lives of Saints from the Book of Lismore*, p. 329.

<sup>5</sup> A very kind and learned critic remarks, “You appear to take the word *rotundum* as descriptive of the particular monastery referred to. But as all monasteries were round, *i.e.* the *Civitas* or Fort, the word would convey no distinctive meaning.” To this I make answer; (1) The argument for the circular form of the monastic buildings is as strong (one might rather say considerably stronger) as that for the circular form of the *Civitas*. If, therefore, “monasterium rotundum” indicates the *tech mor*, or the round tower, “rotundum” is at least equally devoid of meaning. But (2) whatever the *usual* form of the monasteries may have been, I think I have proved that they were not in *all* cases round; and (3) all that is implied by the use of the word “rotundum” is that the Durrow monastery was different in shape from that in which Adamnan wrote, and with which his readers were familiar, or, in other words, that the monastery at Iona was *not* exactly circular. This may well be granted, at least till contrary evidence is produced.





And we may perhaps place along with the "round monastery" of Adamnan that which is spoken of in the following passage of Tirechan's Collections in the Book of Armagh:<sup>1</sup>

"Et crediderunt in Deo. Et consumpti sunt dies ululationis filiarum regis, et sepelierunt eas iuxta fontem *Clebach*, et fecerunt fossam rotundam (in) similitudinem *fertæ*, quia sic faciebant (Scotici) homines et gentiles. Nobiscum hautem reli(c) uocatu(r), id est reliquiæ, et feurt. Et immolata est (*ferta*) Deo et Patricio cum sanctarum ossibus et haeredibus eius post (se in) saecula, et accessiam terrenam fecit in eo loco."

But this discussion has already exceeded its due limits. It must be brought to a close with the consideration of a question which every reader will ere this have asked: Do the remains still existing on the site of St Mulling's monastery yield any evidence for or against the hypothesis advanced by Mr Olden? Does our supposed plan suit the topography of St Mullins? Can we point to probable sites of ancient buildings or sacred spots marked by the crosses of our scribe?

These questions occurred to me the moment I received from Mr Olden the suggestion which has been considered in this chapter. And I anticipated that in seeking an answer to them much help would be derived from an excellent paper entitled "St Mullins, co. Carlow," with plans of the ruins as they were in 1892, published by the Rev J. F. M. French in the *Journal of the Royal Society of Antiquaries of Ireland*, part iv. vol. ii., *fifth series*, p. 377. But actual trial quickly convinced me that this paper, by itself, does not supply sufficient material for our purpose. Very gladly, therefore, I availed myself of the kind invitation of Mrs Kavanagh of Borris Lodge to visit St Mullins and see with my own eyes the spot which has such interest for all students of the ecclesiastical history of Ireland. Shortly after Easter 1896, armed with Mr French's paper and accompanied by my friend J. H. Cunningham, Esq., C.E., Fellow of the Society of Antiquaries of Scotland, I spent a few pleasant hours at Ross Brocc. Our time was short, but Mr Cunningham's presence enabled me to make good use of it. At my request he made some measurements, and drew the plan which is reproduced on the opposite page. It is founded on that made by Mr Cochrane for Mr French, but gives the results of excavations made since it was published, and marks some details which it did not record.<sup>2</sup> It is so

<sup>1</sup> Book of Armagh, f. 12, b. 1. Stokes' *Tripartite Life*, p. 317. We might add also, the cashels at Shankill in the Ards, and Killyhurragh in the parish of Ardclunis, Co. Antrim, mentioned by Reeves in his *Ecclesiastical Antiquities of Down, Connor, and Dromore*, pp. 23, 299. But the degree of precision with which he uses the word "circular" applied to both these must remain doubtful.

<sup>2</sup> Such are the western doorway in the building with which the round tower is connected, another doorway in the wall which divides it into two parts, the lower part of an altar at the east end of the same building, and a piscina in its south wall. Also a small window slit in the south wall of the small church lying next to it on the south.

placed that the points of the compass agree as nearly as possible with those indicated in the device reproduced from our manuscript on p. 167.

The first remark to be made is that the ruins are situated on the level top of a ridge (no doubt that which is mentioned in two passages which have been already cited<sup>1</sup>) which descends abruptly on its eastern, northern, and southern sides.<sup>2</sup> The limits of the monastery on these three sides are therefore pretty clearly defined. The fence marked in the plan indicates the place at which this sharp declivity begins to descend.

There is no sign of a rath, a circumstance which need cause us no surprise. Its absence, however, deprives us of the power of testing our theory in one important particular. But it should be observed that a circle of about 175 feet in diameter can be drawn lying almost wholly within the fence, and yet including all the existing ruins. Such a circle is indicated by the dotted line in the plan. A round monastery, therefore, of about the normal dimensions<sup>3</sup> may very well have at one time occupied the crown of the ridge.

When we seek to identify the crosses in our manuscript with sacred spots on the ancient site at St Mullins we are at once met by difficulties. With one exception,<sup>4</sup> all the existing buildings are evidently of much later date than the ninth century. It might be argued that the more modern structures were erected on the spots formerly occupied by buildings of the ancient *civitas*. But this is in itself disputable,<sup>5</sup> and in any case these earlier buildings were probably smaller than their successors, and it is, therefore, impossible to decide where the crosses representing them should be placed. The exception to the modern character of the buildings is that which is marked as

<sup>1</sup> Above p. 177.

<sup>2</sup> See the drawing of St Molling's Well which accompanies Mr ffrench's paper.

<sup>3</sup> The rath of St Patrik at Armagh, which was regarded as the standard, measured 140 feet, see above p. 181. It may be remarked that a circle of about 150 feet diameter, concentric with that in the plan, would include the oratory of St James and all the other churches, with the exception of small portions of those to the north and south. On the supposition that these later buildings stood on the sites of smaller chapels of early date, the latter might well have been included within a rath of this measurement.

<sup>4</sup> The building over the well with the antique appearance of which Mr ffrench was so much impressed (p. 384) does not appear to have any claim to be regarded as of very early date. The "inclining jambs" of its doorway both incline *in the same direction*, and the fact that its breadth at the sill is greater than at the top is due, not to the intention of the builder, but to the fact that the stone next the lintel on the right is not squared. These phenomena point to bad masonry, but all bad masonry is not old. And the projections of the side walls, on which Mr ffrench lays stress, are smaller than those described by Brash.

<sup>5</sup> In one case—that of the present Parish Church—this supposition seems to be almost demonstrably incorrect. It stands outside the cemetery. I was told by the forester on the Kavanagh estate that his father had assisted at the building of the church. According to his account an attempt was made to build the church partly inside the ancient graveyard. The peasantry, however, offered violent resistance, and in consequence it was placed wholly without the boundary. It is unlikely that one of the old churches was outside the burying ground, or that the people, who had already displayed such strong feeling, would have permitted such a building to be destroyed in order to make room for a Protestant church.



the Oratory. This little chapel appears to correspond in position to the cross at the beginning of the seventh line of our device, while the fragmentary cross<sup>1</sup> to the east of the *Teampul mor* may answer to that which had its place (if we may suppose that this was so) at the beginning of l. 8. But here we cannot speak with assurance: for another difficulty remains: the position of the ancient rath cannot be accurately determined, and we can therefore do no more than conjecture, with whatever degree of probability, how the oratory and the cross stood with reference to it.

To conclude, topographical evidence has not helped us much. It leaves Mr Olden's suggestion nearly as it was before—a hypothesis highly plausible in itself, not indeed altogether free from difficulties (more or less grave), but by no means improbable—yet still only a hypothesis: a theory which is not, perhaps cannot be, either proved or disproved. As a hypothesis it may well hold the field till something more probable is proposed to occupy its place.

And now the last line of this little book has been penned. To the writer its preparation has been a constant source of pleasure. It has for some years occupied hours of leisure snatched from the many cares of pastoral work in a large city. If it stirs up some student, with more time for research and greater skill for handling the subjects with which it deals, to keener interest in a too little known relic of the ancient Celtic Church of Ireland, its purpose will have been accomplished.

LAUS DEO.

<sup>2</sup> The sides of this cross are decorated with interlaced work, and not, as Mr French says, with “a kind of lozenge pattern.”

## APPENDIX A.

THE OLD LATIN PORTIONS OF "THE GARLAND OF  
HOWTH."

For a description of the manuscript of the four Gospels known as the "Garland of Howth" (T.C.D. A.4. 6), and usually designated by the symbol  $r_2$ , the reader may be referred to Professor Abbott's *Evangeliorum Versio Antehieronymiana*, Prefatio, pp. xiv.—xviii. I have already given reasons for my belief that the latter portion of St Matthew, printed in this appendix, is the only fragment of genuine Old Latin text which the manuscript preserves.<sup>1</sup> Professor Abbott<sup>2</sup> regards the whole of the first gospel as pre-hieronymian in character. M. Berger, on the other hand, describes it as approaching nearer to the ancient version than, for example, the Book of Kells, but still only a mixed text.<sup>3</sup> It may be that both writers have been misled by failing to observe the abrupt change which, as has been pointed out, takes place in the latter part of the sixteenth chapter.

I have not thought it necessary to reproduce the text line for line from the manuscript, and for convenience of reference the numbers of chapters and verses have been added throughout. In expanding contractions I have printed the letters which had to be supplied in italics.

\* \* \* \* \*

XVI. ¶homines dicunt esse filium hominis <sup>14</sup> At illi dix[erunt io]- [f. 5 r. hannem baptizam Alii hautem heliam alii uero heremiam aut unum ex profetis <sup>15</sup> dixit illis ihs Uos hautem quem me esse dicitis <sup>16</sup> R[espondens] simon petrus dixit tu es xps filius dei uiui <sup>17</sup> Respondens hautem ihs dixit ei beatus es simon bar iona quia caro et sangis non reuelauitibi sed pater meus qui in caelis est <sup>18</sup> Ideo dico tibi tu es petrus et super hanc petram ædificabo æclisiam meam et porte inferni non proualeabunt aduersus eum <sup>19</sup> et tibi dabo clauis regni caelorum Et quicumque ligaueritis super terram erunt ligata et in caelis et quicumque solueritis super terram erunt soluta et in caelis <sup>20</sup> Tunc

<sup>1</sup> Above, p. 67.

<sup>2</sup> *Op. cit.*, p. xv.

<sup>3</sup> *Histoire de la Vulgate*, p. 42; *Revue Celtique*, vi. p. 355.  
xvi. 17. After ihs there seems to be a cross.

imperauit discipulis suis nemini dicrent *quia* ipse esset  $\overline{xps}$  <sup>21</sup> EX[in]-  
 de coepit ihs ostendere discipulis suis *quod* o[po]rtet eum ire in  
 hirusalem et multa pati a senioribus et principibus sacerdotum et  
 occidi et post tertium diem resurgam <sup>22</sup> Et adsumiens eum petrus  
 coepit increpare et dicere absit atē domine nonerit istud <sup>23</sup> Et ipse  
 coepit dicere *conuersus* ait Uade post me satanas scandalum es mihi  
 non enim sapis *que dei sunt sed que hominum* <sup>24</sup> Tunc ihs dixit disci-  
 pulis suis Si quis uult post me uenire abnegat se ipsum sibi et tollat  
 crucem suam et sequatur me <sup>25</sup> Qui enim uoluerit animam suam saluam  
 facere perdet eam Qui enim perdiderit animam suam propter me  
 inueniet eam <sup>26</sup> Et *quod enim* proderit homini si lucretur hunc mun-  
 d[um] anime uero sue detrimentum patitur Aut quantum [f. 5 v.  
 dauit homo comotationem propter animam suam <sup>27</sup> nam filius hominis  
 uenturus in maiestate fratris sui cum angelis suis Et tunc reddet  
 unicuique secundum opera sua <sup>28</sup> Amen dico uobis quoniam sunt  
 aliqui destantibus istis qui non gustabunt mortem donec uideant  
 filium hominis uenientem in regno suo <sup>1</sup> Et factum est post dies sex  
 Adsumpsit ihm petrum et iacobum et iohannem frater eius et duxit  
 illos in montem excelsum seorsum <sup>2</sup> et splenduit facies eius sicut sol  
 et uestimenta hautem eius factasunt sicut nix <sup>3</sup> Et ecce aperuit eis  
 moyses et helias cum eo loquentes <sup>4</sup> respondens petrus dixit ad ihm  
 domine bonum est nobis hic esse si uis faciamus hic trea tabernacula  
 tibi unum et moysi unum Et heliae unum <sup>5</sup> adhuc eo loquente Et ecce  
 nups abscondita obumbravit eis Et ecce uox denube dicens hic est  
 filius meus dilectus in quo mihi bene complacui Audite ipsum <sup>6</sup> Et  
 audientes ceciderunt in faciem suam et timuiarunt ualde <sup>7</sup> Et ac-  
 cediens eos tetigit eos et dixit surgite et nolite timere <sup>8</sup> eleuantes  
 hautem oculos suos Neminem uiderunt nissi ihm solum <sup>9</sup> Et discen-  
 dentibus illis de monte praecepit eis ihs nemini dixeritis uisum donec  
 filius hominis a mortuis resurgat <sup>10</sup> Et inter rogauerunt eum discipuli  
 dicentes quid ergo scribe dicunt *quod* heliam oportet primum uenire  
<sup>11</sup> ipse respondit ait helias quidem uenturus est restitu[et] uere [f. 6 r.  
 omnia <sup>12</sup> dico hautem uobis *quod* helias iam uenit Et non cog-  
 nouerunt eum et fecerunt ei quanta uoluerunt <sup>13</sup> tunc intellexerunt  
 discipuli quod de iohanne baptista dixit illis sic et filius hominis ne-  
 cesse habet pati ab eis <sup>14</sup> Et cum uenisset ad turbam accessit ad eum  
 homo genibus prouolutis <sup>15</sup> dicens domine misserere filio meo quia  
 lunaticus est et malae torquetur nam sepius in ignem cadit et aliquando  
 in aquam <sup>16</sup> Et obtulli eum discipulis suis et non potuerunt curare eum  
<sup>17</sup> Respondiens ihs dixit O' generatio incredula et peruersa quo usque  
 patiar uos adferte illum ame <sup>18</sup> Et increpauit illum ihs Et exiit ab eo  
 demonium et curatus est puer ex illa hora <sup>19</sup> Tunc accesserunt discipuli  
 ad ihm secreate Et dixerunt ei quare nos non potuimus iecere eum  
<sup>20</sup> dixit illis ihs propter incredulitatem uestram Amen dico uobis si  
 habueritis fidem sicut granum sinapis et dicitis monti huic transi  
 hinc transibit et nihil impossibile erit uobis <sup>21</sup> hoc hautem genus non  
 iecitur nissi per orationem et ieiunium <sup>22</sup> Ipsis hautem conuersantibus

in galiliam *Dixit illi ih̄s futurum est enim ut filium hominis tradetur in manus hominum* <sup>23</sup> *Et occident eum Et post tertium diem resurgere et contristatisunt uechementer* <sup>24</sup> *Et cum uenisset ih̄s incapharnaum ac cessiarunt quide dragma* *accessiarunt exigebant ad petrum* [f. 6 v. et dixerunt magister uester nonsoluet dedragma <sup>25</sup> ait utique et intrauit indomum peruenit eum ih̄s dicens quid tibi uidetur simon regesterre accibus accipiunt tributum uel censum afilis suis an abalienis <sup>26</sup> at ille dixit abalienis *Dixit illi ih̄s ergo liberi sunt* <sup>27</sup> *ut hantem scandalizemus eos uade admare Et mitte amum in mari Et cum piscem qui primus ascenderit tolle et* <sup>28</sup> *perito ore eius*

XVIII. *inuenies ibistateram illam sumiens da eis prome et té* <sup>1</sup> *IN illa die accesserunt discipuli adih̄m dicentes quis putas maior est in regno caelorum* <sup>2</sup> *Et ih̄s uocauit puerum Et statuit eum in medio eorum* <sup>3</sup> *Et dixit amen dico uobis nissi conuersi fueritis et efficiamini sicut infantem non intrabitis in regnum caelorum* <sup>4</sup> *Et qui cumque humiliauerit se sicut puer iste hic maior est in regnum caelorum* <sup>5</sup> *Et qui acciperit infantem talem in nomine meo me accipit* <sup>6</sup> *Qui h scandalizauerit unum depussillis istis qui in me credunt expedit ei ut mola assinaria in collo eius suspendatur Et demergatur in profundum maris* <sup>7</sup> *uae huic mundo ascandalis necesse est enim uenire scandala Verum tamen dico uobis Uae homini per quem scandalum uenit* <sup>8</sup> *quod si manus tua uel pes tuus scandalizate abscede eam Et proiecede abste* *bonum est tibi inuitam uenire* [f. 7 r. debilem et clodum quam duos pedes uel duas manus habentem mitti in ignem aeternum <sup>9</sup> *Sí oculus tuus* *erue eum scandalizat te et proiecede abste Bonum est tibi unum oculum habentem inuitam uenire quam duos oculos habentem mitti in gechenam ignis* <sup>10</sup> *Uidete necontemnatis unum ex his pussillis istis qui in me credunt Dico enim uobis quoniam angeli eorum in caelis uident faciem patris mei qui in caelis est* <sup>11</sup> *Uenit filius hominis saluare quod perierat* <sup>12</sup> *quid uobis uidetur Sí fuerint alicui .c. oues Et sí errauerit una ex eis nonne relinquet nonagenta noem in montibus et uadet querere eam* <sup>13</sup> *Amen dico uobis quod gaudebit in eam magis quam nonagenta noem que non periant quid uobis uidetur* <sup>14</sup> *Sic non est uoluntas ante patrem meum qui in caelis est ut periat unus ex pussillis istis* <sup>15</sup> *Quod sí peccauerit inte frater tuus uade corripe eum inte et ipsum solum quodsí audierit te lucratus es fratrem tuum* <sup>16</sup> *sí hantem nonté audierit adibe tecum adhuc unum uel duos ut in ore duorum testium uel trium stet omne uerbum* <sup>17</sup> *Quod sí non audierit eos defer æclisię* *Sí uero nec æclisiam audierit sit tibi sicut ethinus et puplicanus* <sup>18</sup> *Amen dico uo[bis] quicumque alligaueritis super terram erunt ligata et in caelis Et quicumque solueritis super terram soluta et* [f. 7 v. in caelo <sup>19</sup> *Iterum dico uobis quasi duobus conuenerit inter uos de omni re quecumque petieritis fiet uobis a patre meo qui in caelis est* <sup>20</sup> *Ubi sunt duo uel tres congregata in nomine meo ego in medio*

xviii. 13. In the right margin, opposite "magis," is written "er[.]it" (? = "erit").

eorum <sup>21</sup> Tunc accedens ad eum petrus dicens ei domine si peccauerit in me frater meus quotiens demittam ei usque septies <sup>22</sup> Dixit illi ih̄s non dico tibi usque septies sed usque septuagies et septies <sup>23</sup> Ideo dico vobis simile est regnum caelorum homini regi qui voluit rationem ponere cum servis suis <sup>24</sup> et cum coepisset rationem ponere oblatu<sup>s</sup> est ei unus qui debebat x. tallenta <sup>25</sup> cum non haberet unde rederet iussit eum dominus renundari et uxorem et filios eius Et omnia quae cumque habebat et reddi debitum <sup>26</sup> Procedens ergo servus ille orabat eum dicens patientiam habe in me domine Et omnia reddam <sup>27</sup> Missertus est ha<sup>u</sup>tem dominus servi illius dimisit eum et debitum dimisit ei <sup>28</sup> Egressus ha<sup>u</sup>tem servus ille invenit unum ex conseruis suis qui debebat eum .c. denarios Et adprehendens et suffocabat eum dicens redde mihi quod debeo tibi <sup>29</sup> Procedens conseruus eius rogabat eum dicens patientiam habe in me reddam tibi <sup>30</sup> Ille ha<sup>u</sup>tem noluit sed habuit et misit eum in carcerem donec redderet debitum <sup>31</sup> Uidentes conserui

\* \* \* \* \*

XIX. | possibilia sunt <sup>27</sup> Tunc respondens petrus dixit ei quid ergo erit [f. 9 r. nobis ecce nos relinimus omnia et secuti sumus te <sup>28</sup> ih̄s ha<sup>u</sup>tem dixit eis Amen dico vobis quod uos qui sacuti estis me in generatione ista Cum sederit filius hominis in maiestate sua sedebitis et uos super xii tribus israel <sup>29</sup> Et omnis qui relinquerit domum uel fratres aut sorores aut matrem aut filios aut agros propter nomen meum centuplum accipiet in saeculo isto Et uitam aeternam in futuro <sup>30</sup> Multi ha<sup>u</sup>tem erunt

XX. | primi nouissimi et nouissim[i] primi <sup>1</sup> Simile est enim regnum caelorum hom[ini] pa[tri] familias qui exiit primo mane conducere operarios in messum suam <sup>2</sup> conuentione ha<sup>u</sup>tem facta cum operarios ex diurno missit in uiniam suam <sup>3</sup> Et egressus [diu]rno Et egressus circa horam tertiam et inuenit alios stantes in foro otiosos <sup>4</sup> et [illi]s dixit ite et uos in uiniam meam et quod iustum fuerit dabo uobis <sup>5</sup> Ali ha<sup>u</sup>tem abierunt iterum [ha<sup>u</sup>tem] exiit circa horam nonam et fecit similiter <sup>6</sup> circa undecimam horam Exiit ha<sup>u</sup>tem et inuenit alios stantes Et dixit illis quid hic statis otiosos tota die <sup>7</sup> dicunt ei quia nemo nos conduxit ait illis ite ad uiniam me[am] <sup>8</sup> Cum sero ha<sup>u</sup>tem fatum esset dixit dominus uinie | procuratori suo uoca operarios et redde illis mercedem [f. 9 v. | Neipiens annouissimis usque ad primos <sup>9</sup> Cum uenissent ha<sup>u</sup>tem qui circa undecimam horam uenerant acciperunt singulos denarios <sup>10</sup> Venientes ha<sup>u</sup>tem et primi arbitrati sunt quod plus essent accepturi accipiant et ipsi singulos denarios <sup>11</sup> accipientes murmurauerunt aduersus patrem familias <sup>12</sup> hii nouissimi una hora fecerunt et patres illos nobis fecisti qui portauimus pondus diei et estus <sup>13</sup> At ille respondens uni eorum dixit amice non facio tibi iniuriam nonne ex diurno conuersisti mecum <sup>14</sup> tolle quod tuum est et uade uolo ha<sup>u</sup>tem huic nouissimo huic dare.

xviii. 31. There is a hiatus here owing to the loss of one leaf (xviii. 31-xix. 26). There is also a misplacement of the remaining leaves, that containing xvi. 11 sqq. being made by the binder to follow the present verse.

xix. 28. We should perhaps read "sederet."

sicut et tibi <sup>15</sup> *non licet mihi facere quod uolo* in eis aut oculus tuus nequam *est quia* ego bonus sum <sup>16</sup> *Sic erunt nouissimi primi et primi nouissimi multi enim sunt uocati pauci uero electi* <sup>17</sup> *Et ascendens ihs in hirusolimais adsumpsit duodecim discipulos suos* Et ait illis <sup>18</sup> *ecce ascendimus hirusolimam et filius hominis tradetur principibus sacerdotum et scribis et contempnabunt eum morte* <sup>19</sup> *et tradent eum gentibus ad deludendum et ad flagillandum et crucifigendum* Et tertio die resurget <sup>20</sup> *Tunc ait ad eum mater filiorum sebedei cum duobus filiis adorans et petrus aliquid ab eo* <sup>21</sup> *ipse haitem dixit ei quid uis at illa dixit ei ut sedent hii duo filii mei unus ad [f. 10 r. dexteram tuam et alius ad sinistram in regno tuo* <sup>22</sup> *respondiens haitem ihs dixit nestis quid petatis potestis bibere calicem quem ego bibiturus sum* Et dicunt ei possumus <sup>23</sup> *calicem quidem bibetis sedere haitem ad dexteram uel ad sinistram non est meum dare uobis sed quibus datum est a patre meo* <sup>24</sup> *Et audientes .x. contristati sunt ad du[o]bus fratribus* <sup>25</sup> *ih̄s uocauit eos ad se ait illis s[c]itis quia principes gentium dominantur eorum [et] qui dominantur eorum Et qui dominantur [eorum] potestates exercent in eis* <sup>26</sup> *non ita est inter uos s[ed] quicumque* <sup>27</sup> *inter uos primus esse erit uester seruus* <sup>28</sup> *Sicut [fi]lius hominis non uenit ministrari sed mini[st]rare et dare animam suam redemptionem pro multis* Uos haitem queritis depussillo crescere Et demaiorem esse minoris intrantes haitem et rogati ad cenam nolite recumbere in locis maioribus ne forte clarior super ueniat et a[c]cediens quitē ad cenam uocauit dicat tib[i] adhuc accede Et confunderis si haitem in loco inferiore recumberi Et super uenerit humil[i]ore tē dicet tibi qui te ad cenam uocauit accede ad hūc superius et erit hoc tibi gloria <sup>29</sup> *Et egredientibus illis ad hericho saecutae sunt eum turbae multae* <sup>30</sup> *Et ecce duo caeci sedentes super uiam audientes quod ihs transit Et clamauerunt dicentes misserere nostri filii dauid* [f. 10 v. <sup>31</sup> *Turba haitem increpabat eos ut tacerent at illi magis clamabant domine misserere nostri filii dauid* <sup>32</sup> *Et uocauit eos et ait illis quid multis ut faciam uobis* <sup>33</sup> *dicunt illi ut aperiantur oculi nostri* <sup>34</sup> *missertus haitem illis ihs tetigit oculos eorum et confestim uidierunt et secutae sunt eum*

XXI. <sup>1</sup> *Et adpropinquassent hirusolimam Et cum uenissent bethfage in montem oliueti tunc misit duos ex discipulis suis* <sup>2</sup> *dicientes ite [a]d castellum quod contra uos est et confestim inuenietis [a]sinam alligatam et pullum cum ea soluite et addu[c]ite mihi* <sup>3</sup> *Et si quis uobis aliquid dixerit quia dominus [o]pus habet et confestim remittent uos* <sup>4</sup> *hoc haitem factum est ut impleretur quod dictum est per essaia[m] profetam dicentem* <sup>5</sup> *dicite filiae sion Ecce rex tuus uenit tibi mansuetus et sediens super assinam et pullum nouellum sub ingale* <sup>6</sup> *Euntes haitem discipuli fecerunt sicut praeciperat illis ihs* <sup>7</sup> *et adduxerunt assinam et*

xx. 25. We should perhaps read "eos" for "eis."

xx. 26. The word "inter" (v. 27) begins a fresh line. The vellum is cut above the final "s" of the previous line. It may have had a horizontal stroke over it. Three or four letters are gone. Hence I restore the reading "s̄ q̄ ē q̄;" = "sed quicumque." What seems to be a portion of the first q remains.

xx. 28. A slight space follows "superius," in which possibly something is written.

pullum Et imposuerunt super eum uestimenta et sedebat [s]uper eum  
<sup>8</sup>Plurimi *hautem* strauerunt uestimenta sua in uia Alii *hautem* cedebant  
 ramos de arboribus et sterneriebant in uia <sup>9</sup>turbæ *hautem* quæ procedebant  
 et qui sedebant clamabant dicentes ossanna filii dauid Benedictus  
 qui uenit in nomine domini ossanna in excelsis <sup>10</sup>Et cum intrasset iherusalem  
 commota est uniuersa ciuitas dicentes quis est hic <sup>11</sup>multi [f. 8 r.  
*hautem* dixerunt hic est ih̄s anazareth galilæe <sup>12</sup>[et intrauit] ih̄s in  
 templum dei et iecit ih̄s omnes uenden[tes et e]mentes in templo et  
 mensas numulariorum E[t cath]edras uendentium columbas eueritit  
<sup>13</sup>et dixit s[crib]tum est domus mea domus orationis uocauit[ur] [uos]  
*hautem* fecistis eam speloncam latronum <sup>14</sup>Et acce[dunt] ad eum caeci  
 et claudi in templo et sanabat eos <sup>15</sup>[ui]dient *hautem* principes sacerdotum  
 et scribe mirab[ilia] quæ fecit ih̄s Et pueros clamantes et  
 dicentes [ossan]na filii dauid indignati sunt <sup>16</sup>et dixerunt ei audist[i]  
 quid] isti dicunt ih̄s *hautem* dixit illis utique non legisti EX ore infa[n]tium  
 et lactantium perfecisti laudem <sup>17</sup>Et relictis illis abiit foras  
 extraciuuitatem in bethania ibique mansit <sup>18</sup>ma[ne] *hautem* transiit  
 in ciuitatem essuriit <sup>19</sup>Et uidien[s arbo]rem feci unam secus feci unam  
 uenit ad eam E[t] n[on] inuenit in eam nissi folia tantum ait ad eam  
 [Nu]nquam e[st] fructus nasceretur in sempiternum et aruit con-  
 tinuo ficulnia <sup>20</sup>Et uidentes discipuli mirati sunt quomodo [conti]nuo  
 aruit <sup>21</sup>respondens *hautem* ih̄s dixit eis Amen dico uobis [si ha-]  
 bueritis fidem et non essitaueritis non solum diff[icul]tia facietis sed  
 mundi huic dixeritis tolle et iacta te in mare faciet <sup>22</sup>omnia  
 quaecumque petieritis in oratione credentes accipietis <sup>23</sup>et cum uenisset  
 in templum Accesserunt ad eum principes sacerdotum [et sen]ioris  
 populi dicentis in qua potest[ate] hæc facis Et quis tibi dedit hæc  
 potestatem <sup>24</sup>R[espondens] ih̄s dixit [illis] interrogabo uos [f. 8 v.  
 et ego unum uerbum dicite m[ichi] Et ego uobis dicam in qua  
 potestate hæc facis <sup>25</sup>baptismum iohannis unde uenit de caelo  
 an ex [h]ominibus illi *hautem* cogitabant intrare dicentes <sup>26</sup>si  
 [di]xerimus de caelo dicet nobis quare ergo non credidistis [ill]i Si  
 dixerimus ex hominibus timemus turbam omnes [enim] habebat  
 iohannem sicut profetam <sup>27</sup>respondentes ad ih̄m dixerunt nescimus  
 Ait illis ih̄s nec ego uobis dico in qua [p]otestate hæc facio <sup>28</sup>quid  
 uobis uidetur homo quidam [h]abebat duos filios et accedens ad  
 primum [dixit] filii uade hodie operari in uinum meum <sup>30</sup>ille *hautem*  
 dixit [eo] domine et non habuit Accessit *hautem* ad alium dixit simi-  
 liter <sup>29</sup>ille *hautem* respondit nolo et postea penitentia ductus Abiit  
 in uinum <sup>31</sup>quis ergo ex duobus fecit uoluntatem patris dicunt nouis-  
 simus dicit illis ih̄s Amen dico uobis quia publicani et meretrices præ-  
 cedunt uos in regnum dei <sup>32</sup>Uenit enim iohannis ad [u]os in uia  
 iustitiæ et non credidistis ei publicani *hautem* et meretrices  
 crediderunt ei Uos *hautem* uidentes nec penitentiam egistis quod

xxi. 11. The page beginning with this verse is out of its place. See note to xviii. 31.

xxi. 12. For "E[t cath]edras" we should perhaps read "C[ath]edras."

credidistis ei postea <sup>33</sup>Aliam parabolam audite homo erat pater famili-  
[as] et plantauit uinias Et sepem circum dediteum [et] fodit in eam  
torcular et edificauit turrem locauit eam colonis et peregre profectus est  
<sup>34</sup> Cum hanc ad[pro]p[in]casset fructum tempus missit seruos suos [s]  
ad [e] colonos ut acceperent defructibus suis <sup>35</sup> E[t] coloni [f. 11 r.  
adpræchensis seruis unum coeder[unt] a]lium lapidauerunt  
aliu[m] uero occiderunt <sup>36</sup> iterum missit alios seruos plures priori-  
bus fecerunt illis similiter <sup>37</sup> nouissime hanc missit illis filium  
suu[m] unicu[m] diciens uerebuntur filium meum <sup>38</sup> Coloni [hanc]  
uidentes filium dixerunt intrase hic est heres uen[ite] occidamus eum  
Et habemus hereditatem eius <sup>39</sup> et adpræchensum eum occiderunt et  
deiecerunt extra uiniam <sup>40</sup> Cum ergo uenerit dominus uiniae quid  
faciet coloni[s] illis <sup>41</sup> Et dixerunt illi malos malae perdet et ueni[am]  
locauit aliis colonis qui reddant ei fructus t[em]poribus suis <sup>42</sup> dixit  
illis ih̄s nunquam legistis inscript[u]ris Lapidem quem reprobauerunt  
ædificantes hic factus est in capud anguli adomino factus est istud  
hoc est mirabile in oculis nostris <sup>43</sup> ideo dico uobis quia auferetur a  
uobis regnum dei Et dabitur genti facienti fructum eius <sup>45</sup> Et cum  
audissent pri[n]cipes sacerdotum et farissei fabulas cognouerunt  
quod deip[s]is diceret <sup>46</sup> et querentes eum tenere inuenierunt turbas  
XXII. quoniam sicut profecta eum habebant <sup>1</sup> Et respondens ih̄s dixit illis  
in parabolam diciens <sup>2</sup> Simile [est] regnum caelorum homini regi qui  
nuptias filio suo <sup>3</sup> Et missit seruos suos uocare ad nuptias et noluerunt  
uenire <sup>4</sup> Et iterum missit alios seruos diciens dicite inuitatis Ecce  
prandium meum parauit tauri mei et saginata occisa Et omnia [f. 11 v.  
paratasunt uenite adnuptias <sup>5</sup> illi hanc [n]eglexiarunt et abiarunt  
alii in uillas suas alii uero ad negotiationem suam <sup>6</sup> caeteri hanc  
adpræchensus illius contumilia afflictos occiderunt <sup>7</sup> rex hanc  
audisset et iratus est Et missit exercitum suum Et disperdit homicidas  
illos et ciuitates eorum succendit <sup>8</sup> tunc dixit seru[s] suis nuptiae quidem  
parate sunt sed qui uocatisunt nonfuiarunt digni <sup>9</sup> ITE ergo ad exitum  
uiarum Et quos cumque inueneritis uocate adnuptias <sup>10</sup> et egressi serui  
illius inuias Et congregauerunt quot quot inueniarunt bonos et malos Et  
inpletesunt nuptiae discumbentibus <sup>11</sup> intrauit autem rex ut uideret  
discumbentes Et uidit ibi hominem non uestimentum ueste nuptiale  
<sup>12</sup> et ait illi amice quomodo huc uenisti non habiens uestem nuptialem  
At ille obmutuit <sup>13</sup> tunc rex missit ministros tollete eum manibus et  
pedibus Et mitere eum in tenebras exteriores ibi erit fletus et stridor  
dentium <sup>14</sup> Multi hanc uocati pauci uero electi <sup>15</sup> Tunc abiarunt  
farissei consilium fecerunt ut caperent eum in uerbo <sup>16</sup> et misserunt  
discipulos suos cum herodianis dicentes magister quia uera non est  
tibi cura dealiquo non enim respicis in personas hominum <sup>17</sup> quid  
uidetur tibi si licet censum cessari a non <sup>18</sup> cognoscens hanc  
ih̄s nequitias eorum dixit Numquid me temptatis chypochrite  
<sup>19</sup> Ostendite mihi nouissime censum At illi optullesunt ei [f. 12 r.  
denarium <sup>20</sup> ait illis ih̄s cuius est imago h[anc] et conscriptio



<sup>21</sup> dicunt ei cessaris Tunc dicit illis ih̄s reddite ergo quae sunt cessaris cessari et quae sunt dei deo <sup>22</sup> Hiis auditis mirati sunt et relicto eo recesserunt <sup>23</sup> IN illa die accesserunt ad eum saducei qui dicunt non esse resurrectionem Et interrogauerunt eum <sup>24</sup> dicentes magister moyses dixit si quis mortuus illius fuerit non habiens filium adducat fratrem uxorem illius et suscitet semen fratri suo <sup>25</sup> Erant enim apud nos .vi. fratres Et primus uxorem duxit et mortuus est non habiens semen reliquit uxorem suam fratri suo <sup>26</sup> similiter et secundus et tertius usque ad septimum <sup>27</sup> nouissime hanc omnium et mulier defuncta est <sup>28</sup> IN resurrectione ergo cuius erit de .vi. uxor omnes enim habuerant eam <sup>29</sup> Respondens ih̄s dixit errantes nescientes scripturas neque uirtutem dei <sup>30</sup> IN resurrectione ergo mortuorum Neque nubunt Neque nubunt Neque nubuntur sed erunt sicut angeli dei in caelo <sup>31</sup> Deresurrectione ergo non legistis quomodo dictum est uobis a domino dicente <sup>32</sup> EGO sum deus abraham deus issac deus iacob non est deus mortuorum sed uiuentium <sup>33</sup> Et cum audisset turbae mirabantur indoctrinam eius <sup>34</sup> farisei hanc audientes quod silentium inposuit saduceis congregatisque aduersus eum <sup>35</sup> Interrogauit eum unus ex eis legis doctor temptans eum Et diei <sup>36</sup> magister [f. 12 v. quod mandatum maximum in lege. <sup>37</sup> Et [a]it illi ih̄s diligis dominum deum tuum ex toto corde tuo Et in tota anima tua et in tota mentatua <sup>38</sup> hoc est mag[ist]r[um] et primum mandatum <sup>39</sup> secundum uero simile huic diliges proximum tuum tamquam te ipsum <sup>40</sup> IN hiis duobus mandatis tota lex pendet et profete <sup>41</sup> Congregatis hanc fariseis interrogauit eos ih̄s <sup>42</sup> dicens quid uobis uidetur de operibus fidelis est dicent ei dauid <sup>43</sup> Ait illis ih̄s quomodo ergo dauid dicit uocat eum dominum dicens <sup>44</sup> Dixit dominus domino meo sede ad dexteris meis donec ponam inimicos tuos scabellum pedum tuorum <sup>45</sup> Si ergo dauid in spiritu uocat eum dominum quomodo filius eius est <sup>46</sup> Et nemo poterat respondere illi uerbum

XXIII. Nec auius est quisquam ex illa die quod eum amplius interrogare <sup>1</sup> Tunc locutus est turbis et discipulis suis <sup>2</sup> dicens super cathedram moysi sediarunt scribe et farisei <sup>3</sup> Omnia ergo quaecumque dixerint uobis facite et seruatae secundum uero facta eorum nolite facere dicunt enim et ipsi non faciunt <sup>4</sup> Alligant enim honorographia et inportabilia et imponunt super humeros hominum digito suo noluit ea moueri <sup>5</sup> Omni uero sua opera faciunt ut uideantur abominibus dilatant enim filacteria sua et magnificant fimbrias <sup>6</sup> Amant hanc primos discubitos in conuiuiis et primas cathedras in sinagogis <sup>7</sup> et salutationes [f. 13 r. in foro et uocari ab hominibus rabbi <sup>8</sup> Uos uero ne uocemini ab hominibus rabbi unus est enim magister uester x̄ps Nam uos omnes fratres estis <sup>9</sup> Et patrem nolite uocare uobis super terram unus est enim pater uester qui in caelis est <sup>10</sup> Nec uocemini magistri quoniam magister uester x̄ps est <sup>11</sup> qui uult maior in uobis esse erit uester minister <sup>12</sup> Et

xxii. 24. The word "et" is doubtful.

xxii. 40. There is a space before "IN" in which a word (? Et) may perhaps be written.

quicumque enim exaltauerit se humiliabitur et qui se humiliat exaltabitur <sup>13</sup> Uae haitem uobis scribe et farissei chipochrite qui eluditis regnum caelorum ante homines Uos enim non introitis Nec introiuntes sinitis introire <sup>14</sup> Ue uobis scribe et farissei chipochrite qui comeditis domum uiduarum occasione longa orantes propter hoc accipietis amplius iudicium <sup>15</sup> Uae uobis scribe et farissei chypocrite quia circumitis mare et aridam ut faciatis unum prosilitum Et cum factus fuerit faciatis eum filium gechene duplo quam uos <sup>16</sup> Uae uobis duces ceci qui dicitis qui cumque iurauerat intemplum nihil est qui haitem iurauerit inaurum templi debitor est <sup>17</sup> stulti et caeci quid enim [mai]s est aurum an templum quod sanctificat aur[um] <sup>18</sup> et quicumque iurauerit in altare nihil est Se[d] quicumque iurauerat in eo quod est super illud debitor est <sup>19</sup> quid enim enim maius est donum uel altare quod sanctificat donum <sup>20</sup> Qui [eni]m iurauerat per altare iurat per eum et [f. 13 v. per omnia quae super illud sunt] <sup>21</sup> Et qui [iu]rauerat per templum iurat in illo et in [eo] qui habitat in ipso <sup>22</sup> Et qui iurat per cael[um] iurat per thronum dei et per eum qui sedet in ipso <sup>23</sup> Uae uobis scribe et farissei chypochrite qui decimatis mentam et anniatam Et cyminum et reliquistis quae grauiora sunt legis iudicium et misericordiam et fidem pacem haitem oportuerat facere et illa non omitere <sup>24</sup> duces caeci excolentes calicem camellum haitem glutientis <sup>25</sup> Uae uobis scribae et farissei chipochrite qui mundatis quod deforis est calicis et parapsidis intus haitem pleni rapina et iniquitate <sup>26</sup> farissae caece munda primum quod intus est calicis ut fiat id quod deforis est mundum <sup>27</sup> Uae uobis scribe et farisse quoniam simile estis dealbatis monumentis quae aforis apparent hominibus speciosa intus uero plena sunt os[sibus] mortuorum Et omnes p[ur]citia <sup>28</sup> sic et] uos quidem aforis par[etis] hominibus iusti intus haitem pleni estis f[ic]ta simulatione] et iniquitate <sup>29</sup> Ue uobis s[cribae] et far[issei] chypocrite qui edificatis [sepul]chra profetarum et ornatis monumenta [i]ustorum <sup>30</sup> et dicitis quia si fuissemus in diebus patrum nostrorum [f. 14 r. non [es]simus socii eorum insangine profetarum] <sup>31</sup> ita[que] testimonium peribetis uobis quia filii estis eorum qui occiderunt profetas <sup>32</sup> Et uos adimplete mensuram patrum uestrorum. <sup>33</sup> serpentes [ge]neratio uiperarum quomodo effugietis a iudicio g[e]ne <sup>34</sup> Ideo ecce ego mitto ad uos profetas Et sapientes et scribas et ex illis occidetis Et crucifig[et]is et flagillabitis in sinagogis et persequemini] decuitate incuitatem <sup>35</sup> Ideo uenit super uos omnis iustus sanguis qui effusus est super terram ab Abel iusti usque ad sanguinem sacharie filii barachi[ae] qu[em] occidistis in templum et altare <sup>36</sup> Amen [dico] uobis uenient haec omnia super generationem istam] <sup>37</sup> hirusalem hirusalem quae occidis profet[as] Et lapidas eos qui ad te missi sunt quotiens uolui congregare filios tuos sicut gallina congregat pullos suos sub alas suas Et

xxiii. 20. The reading "[eni]m" is perhaps doubtful.

xxiii. 28. The words "f[ic]ta simulatione]" are supported by *h*, and suit the space.

noluisti <sup>38</sup> Ecce relinquetur vobis domus uestra deserta <sup>39</sup> Dico *hautem* vobis quoniam non videbitis me amodo donec dicatis benedictus qui venit in nomine domini <sup>1</sup> Et ressus ih̄s de templo et ibat et accessiarunt ad eum discipuli eius ut ostenderunt ei fructuram templi <sup>2</sup> Ipse *hautem* respondens dixit videtis hanc omnia Amen dico vobis non [re-]lineetur hic lapis super lapidem qui nondistru[atur] <sup>3</sup> Sedente *hautem* illo in monte oliueti accesserunt a[d eum] [discipuli [f. 14 v. eius insacriatio dicentes dīe nobis quando erunt quod signum ventus tui et consummationem seculi <sup>4</sup> quibus respon[diens] dixit videte nequis vos seducat <sup>5</sup> Multi enim venient in nomine meo dicentes ego sum xp̄s et multos seducent <sup>6</sup> Audistis enim pugnas et oppiniones bellorum sed turbemini Oportet enim hoc fieri sed nondum est finis <sup>7</sup> exurget enim gens contragentem et regnum contra regnum et erunt fames et terre motus per loca <sup>8</sup> Omnia hanc sunt initia dolorum <sup>9</sup> Tunc tradent vos in tribulatione et occident vos et eritis horribiles gentibus propter nomen meum <sup>10</sup> Et tunc scandalizabunt multi Et inuicem se tradent et occident se inuicem <sup>11</sup> Et multi seodoprofete exurgent Et multos seducent <sup>12</sup> quia habundauit iniquitas et re[fri]gerescet caritas multorum <sup>13</sup> qui *hautem* perseuerauerit usque in finem hic saluus erit <sup>14</sup> Et praedicabitur hoc euangelium regni per totum orbem in testimonium omnibus gentibus Et tunc venient finis <sup>15</sup> Cum ergo uideritis abominationem desolationis quod dictum est per danielum profetum stantem in loco sancto qui legit intellegat <sup>16</sup> Tunc qui in iudaea sunt fugiant in montibus <sup>17</sup> Et qui in tecto sunt non discendant tollere aliquid de domo <sup>18</sup> Et qui in agro sunt non uertatur tollere tonicas suas <sup>19</sup> Ua *hautem* pregnantibus et nutriendis in illis diebus <sup>20</sup> Orate *hautem* ut non fiat fuga uestra chemie uel salbato <sup>21</sup> erit enim tribulatio magna qualis non fuit ab initio saeculi usque modo sed neque fiet <sup>22</sup> et missi breuiati fuissent [f. 17 r. dies illi non saluasset omnis car[o sed] propter electos breuiabuntur dies illi <sup>23</sup> Tunc si quis uobis dixerit Ecce hic ecce illic nolite cred[ere] <sup>24</sup> surgent enim seodo xp̄i et seodo profete Et dabunt signa magna et prodigia ita ut in errorem inducantur si fier[i] potest etiam electi <sup>25</sup> ecce praedixi vobis <sup>26</sup> si enim dixerint vobis ecce in deserto est nolite credere <sup>27</sup> sicut enim fulgor exiit ab oriente et apparet usque in occidentem ita erit aduentus filii hominis <sup>28</sup> Ubi fuerit corpus illius congregabuntur aquile <sup>29</sup> Statim *hautem* post tribulationem dierum illorum sol obscurabitur et luna non dabit lumen suum Et stelle cadent de caelo Et uirtutes caelorum commouebuntur <sup>30</sup> Et tunc apparebit signum filii hominis in caelo et lamentabunt se om[n]es tribus terre et uidebunt filium hominis uenient[em] in nubibus caeli cum uirtute multa et maiesta[te] <sup>31</sup> Et mittet angelos suos cum uoce magna Et con[gre]gabunt electos suos a quatuor angulis uent[urorum] assummis caelorum usque ad terminos eorum Cum co[e-

xxiv. 6. For "hoc" we should perhaps read "hanc."

xxiv. 22. Fo. 17 has been misplaced by binder, and now follows that containing xxv. 34-xxvi. 18.

xxiv. 26. "enim" should perhaps be read "hautem."

[perint] *haute[m] haec fieri respicite et leuate capud quoniam adpro[piat] redemptio uestra* <sup>32</sup> Ab arbore *haute[m] fici discite [para]bulam cum iam ramus eius tener fuerit Et folia nata [fu]erint cognoscitis prope esse aetatem* <sup>33</sup> sic et uobis cu[m] uideritis *haec omnia scitote quoniam prope est ianu[s]* <sup>34</sup> A[m]en dico uobis *quoniam non praeteribit generatio haec donec fiant [omnia]* <sup>35</sup> caelum et terram transibunt Verba *haute[m] mea non praeteribu[nt]* <sup>36</sup> de die *haute[m]* [f. 17 v. illa uel hora nemo scit nissi pater solus] <sup>37</sup> Sicut enim indiebus noe. ita erit aduentus filii hominis <sup>38</sup> Sicut enim erat in diebus illis ante diluuium manducabant et bibebant et nubebant uxores ducebant usque indiem quo intrauit noe in arcam <sup>39</sup> Et non senserunt donec uenit diluuium et tulliit omnes ita erit aduentus filii hominis <sup>40</sup> Tunc erunt duo in agro unus adsummetur et alius relinquitur <sup>41</sup> due molentes ad molam una adsummetur et alter relinquitur <sup>42</sup> Uigilate ergo quia nescitis qua die uel hora dominus uester uenturus est <sup>43</sup> illud *haute[m] scitote quoniam si sciret pater familias qua hora fu[r] ueniet uigilaret utique et non consentiret perfoderi domum suam* <sup>44</sup> Ideo et uos estote parati quia nescitis qua hora filius hominis uenturus est <sup>45</sup> Quis nam est fidelis seruus et quem constituit dominus super familiam suam ut det illi cybum in tempore <sup>46</sup> Beatus seruus ille quem ueniens dominus eius est inuenerit sic facientem <sup>47</sup> Amen dico uobis quoniam su[pr]a omnia bona sua constituet eum <sup>48</sup> Si *haute[m] malus il[le s]* eruus dixerit in corde suo moram facit dominus [me]us uenire ad me <sup>49</sup> Et incipiet conseruos suos percutere manducet *haute[m] et bibit cum ebriosis* <sup>50</sup> Cum *haute[m] ueniet dominus seru[i] illius in die qua non sperat et oraqua ignorat* <sup>51</sup> et diuidet eum partem *que eius ponet eum hypochritis Ibi erit fletus et* XXV. *stridor dentium* <sup>1</sup> Tunc simulabitur regnum caelorum .x. uirginibus *quae acciperunt lampadas suas et prodiaunt obiam sponsi* [f. 15 r. et sponse. <sup>2</sup> .u. *haute[m] ex eis erant fatuae et .u. sapientes* <sup>3</sup> fatuae *haute[m] acceptis lampadibus suis non sumpserunt oleum secum* <sup>4</sup> sapientes *haute[m] sumpserunt oleum secum in uassis cum lampadibus suis* <sup>5</sup> moram *haute[m] sponsus faciente domierunt* <sup>6</sup> media *haute[m] nocte clamor factus Ecce sponsus uenit exite obiam ei* <sup>7</sup> tunc surrexerunt omnes ille uirgines acceperunt l[am]padas suas <sup>8</sup> Fatuae *haute[m] sapientibus dixerunt date nobis de oleo uestro quia lampades nostre extinguuntur* <sup>9</sup> Responderunt prudentes dixerunt nonne forte non sufficit nobis et uobis ite putius ad omnes qui uendunt emite nobis oleum <sup>10</sup> euntes emere oleum uenit sponsus Et quae parate erant intrauerunt cum eo ad nuptias et clausa est ianua <sup>11</sup> postea ueniarunt reliquae uirgines dicentes domine domine aperii nobis <sup>12</sup> At ille respondens dixit Amen dico uobis. quia nescio uos <sup>13</sup> uigilate itaque quia nescitis diem neque horam <sup>14</sup> sicut enim homo peregre proficisciens uocauit seruos suos Et tradidit illis Substantiam suam <sup>15</sup> Et uni quidem dedit .u. tallenta Alii *haute[m] duo. Alii uero unum unicuique secundum propriam uirtutem Et profectus est continuo* <sup>16</sup> *haute[m] ab hiis .u. tallenta acceperet et operatus est in eis Et lucratus*

est alia ·u· <sup>17</sup>similit et qui duo tallenta acciperat lucratus est alia duo <sup>18</sup>Qui *hautem* unum acciperit fudit interram et abscondit pecuniam domini sui <sup>19</sup>¶<sup>ut</sup>Unumultum | tempus venit dominus [f. 15 v. seruorum illorum Et cum possuit rationem eis <sup>20</sup>accessit qui ·u· tallenta acciperat Et obtulit alia ·u· dicens domine ·u· tallenta mihi tradidisti, ecce alia ·u· lucratus sum <sup>21</sup>ait illi dominus eius euge serue bone et fidelis quia super pauca fidelis fuisti super multate constituam intra ingaudium tuum et domini tui <sup>24</sup>Accedens *hautem* qui unum tallentum acciperat ait illi domine sceram quia homo durus es metis ubi non seminasti <sup>25</sup>Tinni ergo et abii Et abscondi tallentum tuum interra ecce habes quod tuum est <sup>26</sup>et respondens *hautem* dominus eius dixit ei serue nequam et piger scebas quia meto ubi nonsemino et colligo ubi nonsparsi <sup>27</sup>Oportuit ergo uenundari pecuniam meam numularis Et ego ueniens recipissem eum ussuris quod meum est <sup>28</sup>tollite itaque abeo tallentum et da ei qui habet ·x· tallenta <sup>29</sup>Omni enim habenti dabitur ei et habundabit ei qui non habet quod habet etiam auferetur abeo <sup>30</sup>Et nequam seruum iecitur foras intenebras exteriores illic erit fletus Et stridor dentium <sup>31</sup>Cum *hautem* uenerit filius hominis in maiestate sua et omnes angeli eum eo tunc sedebit super sedem maiestatis sue <sup>32</sup>Et congregabuntur ante eum omnes gentes et sperauit eos abinuicem Sicut pastor segregat eos abedulis <sup>33</sup>et statuet oues quidem adextris suis edos *hautem* asenistris <sup>34</sup>Tunc dicet rex his qui adextris sunt Venite benedicti patris mei possedite | regnum quod uobis paratum [f. 16 r. est aborigine mundi <sup>35</sup>Essuriui enim et dedistis mihi manducare Sitiui et dedistis mihi bibere o spes eram et suscepistis me <sup>36</sup>Nudus fui et co operuistis me infirmus eram et uissitastis me IN carcere fui et uenistis adme <sup>37</sup>Tunc respondebunt ei dicentes iusti domine quando te uidimus essurientem et pauius te autsitientem et pauius te <sup>38</sup>aut quando *hautem* teuidimus hospitem et suscepimus te aut nudum et co operuimus te <sup>39</sup>uel quando te uidimus infirmum uel in carcere et uenimus adte <sup>40</sup>Et respondens rex dicet illis Amen dico uobis quandiu fecistis uni ex fratribus meis minimis mihi fecistis <sup>41</sup>Tunc dicet his qui asenistris sunt discedite ame maledicti sunt in ignem eternum quem preparauit pater meus sabulo et angelis eius <sup>42</sup>Essuriui enim et non dedistis mihi manducare sitiui et non dedistis mihi bibere <sup>43</sup>hospis eram et non suscepistis me Nudus fui et non co operuistis me INfirmus fui et in carcere et non uenistis adme <sup>44</sup>Tunc respondent ei iniusti dicentes domine quando te uidimus essurientem etsitientem aut hospitem aut nudum aut infirmum aut in carcere Et non ministrauimus tibi <sup>45</sup>Tunc respondet eis dicens Amen dico uobis quandiu non fecistis uni ex minimis istis nec mihi fecistis <sup>46</sup>Et tunc ibunt in iusti in ignem eternum iusti *hautem*

XXVI. inuitam perpetuam <sup>1</sup>Et factum est cum consummasset ihs omnia uerba hanc dixit discipulis suis <sup>2</sup>scitis quia post biduum [f. 16 v. pascha fiat Et filius hominis tradetur principibus sacerdotum et

xxvi. 2. The second letter of "er[ueif]igetur" looks more like "u" than "r."

er[ueif]igetur <sup>3</sup> Tunc congregati sunt principes sacerdotum et seniores populi in atrium principis sacerdotum qui uocabatur caiphas <sup>4</sup> et consilium fecerunt ut ihm dolo tenerent <sup>5</sup> et dicebant non in diem festum Et tumultus fieri in populo <sup>6</sup> Cum haute[m] esset ihs in bethania in domu simonis leprosi <sup>7</sup> accessit ad eum mulier habiens alabastrum ungenti praetiosi Et effudit super caput eius recumbente ipso <sup>8</sup> quod cum uidissent discipuli indignatisunt dicentes ut quid perlitio haec <sup>9</sup> potuit haec nenundari praetio magna et dari pauperibus <sup>10</sup> quod ut cognouit ihs ait illis quid molesti estis uobiscum me haute[m] nonsemper habebitis <sup>12</sup> Ecce enim mittiens in corpus meum ungentum adsepeliendum me fecit <sup>13</sup> Amen dico uobis ubi cumque praedicatum fuerit hoc euangelium intoto mundo narrabitur Et quod fecit haec immemori[m] ipsius <sup>14</sup> Tunc abiit unus dediscipulis suis qui dicitur iudas scarioth Et principes sacerdotum <sup>15</sup> Et ait illis quid uultis mihi dare et ego uobis eum trad[am] at illi constituerunt ei xxx. stateris <sup>16</sup> Et ex inde querebant oportunitatem ut eum traderet eis <sup>17</sup> prima haute[m] die azemorum accesserunt discipuli ad ihm dicentes ubi uis paremus tibi comedere phasecha <sup>18</sup> At ille dixit eis

\* \* \* \* \*

[ad discipulos suos et ait illis dormite iam et requies cite ecce [f. 18 r. adpropineauit ora et filius hominis tradetur immanus peccatorum <sup>46</sup> surgite eamus ecce adpropineauit qui me tradit <sup>47</sup> Ad huc eo loquente ecce iudas unus de xii et eum eo turba multa cum gladis et fustibus nisi a principibus sacerdotum et senioribus populi <sup>48</sup> qui haute[m] tradet eum dicit dedit illis signum dicens quem cumque osculatus fuero ipse est tenete eum <sup>49</sup> Et confestim accessit ad ihm et dixit aue rabbi osculatus est eum <sup>50</sup> cui dixit ihs amice ad quod uenisti fac Tunc accesserunt et manus iniecerunt in ihm et tenuerunt eum <sup>51</sup> et unus ex his qui erant cum ihm Extendens manum exemit gladium suum et percussit seruum principis sacerdotum et abscidit auriculam eius <sup>52</sup> Tunc ait illi ihs conuerte gladium tuum in locum suum omnes enim qui accipiunt gladium gladio peribunt <sup>53</sup> aut non putatis possum me modo rogare patrem meum Et exhiberet mihi plus quam xii milia legionis angelorum <sup>54</sup> quomodo ergo implebuntur scripture quasi oportet fieri <sup>55</sup> in il[la] hora dixit ihs ad turbas quasi ad latro[nem] uenistis cum gladis et fustibus conpraeuocare me Cotidie apud nos eram in templo dociens et non tenuistis me <sup>56</sup> Hoc haute[m] totum factum est ut impleretur [scripturae profetarum tunc discipuli eius relicto fugerunt [f. 18 v. <sup>57</sup> illi haute[m] tenentes ihm et perduxerunt eum ad caifan princeps sacerdotum in quo scribe et sacerdotes conuenerant <sup>58</sup> Petrus haute[m] sequebatur eum alonge usque in atrium principis sacerdotum Et ingressus intus sedebat cum ministris uideret exitum rei <sup>59</sup> principes haute[m]

xxvi. 8. We should perhaps read "hoc" for "haec."

xxvi. 18. A misplaced leaf (f. 17) follows this verse in the manuscript. See note on xxiv. 22.

sacerdotum Et uniuersum concilium querebant falsum testimonium aduersus ihū ut eum morti traderent <sup>60</sup> Et non inuenerunt in eum quiquam nouisse hautem uenerunt duo falsi testes <sup>61</sup> Et dixerunt Audiuius hunc dixisse possum destruere templum dei hoc et in triduo re edificare illud <sup>62</sup> Et surgens princeps sacerdotum ait illi adiuro tē per deum uiuum ut dicas nobis si tu es xps filius dei uiui Et dixit illi nihil respondi ad ea quae isti aduersus testificantur <sup>63</sup> ihs hautem tacebat respondiens principibus sacerdotum Ait illi adiuro tē per deum uiuum ut dicas nobis si tu es xps filius dei uiui <sup>64</sup> Et dixit illi illi ihs tū dixisti Veruntamen dico nobis amodo uidebitis filius hominis sedentem adextris uirtutis Et uenientem innubibus caeli <sup>65</sup> Tunc princeps sacerdotum scidit uestimenta sua dicens [f. 19 r. scidit blasfemauit quid adhuc opus nobis Ecce audistis blasphemiam eius <sup>66</sup> quid uobis uidetur At illi responderunt omnes dixerunt reus est mortis <sup>67</sup> tunc expuerunt in faciem eius et colofis cedentes <sup>68</sup> profetiza nobis xpe quis te percussit <sup>69</sup> Petrus hautem foris in atrio sedebat Et accessit ad eum una ancilla dixit ei et tu cum ihū galilio eras <sup>70</sup> at ille negauit coram omnibus dicens nescio quid dicis neque intellego <sup>71</sup> EXiunte hautem illo ad ianua uidit eum alia ancilla et ait eis qui erant ibi Et hic erat cum ihū galilio <sup>72</sup> Et iterum negauit eum iuramento dicens non noui hominem <sup>73</sup> et post pussillum accipiantur qui ministrabant et dixerunt petro uere ex illis es tū nam et loquellam tuam manifestatē <sup>74</sup> Tunc coepit deuotare se et iurare quod non nouisset hominem Et continuo gallus cantauit <sup>75</sup> Et recordatus est petrus uerbi ihū quod dixerat prius quam gallus cantet ter me negabis Et egressus foras amarissime fleuit <sup>1</sup> Mane hautem facto consilium fecerunt principes sacerdotum et seniores plebis aduersus ihū ut eum morti traderent <sup>2</sup> Et uinctum adduxerunt eum et tradiderunt pontio pylato praessidi <sup>3</sup> Uidiens ihs iudas qui eum tradidit quia damnatus esset poenitentia ductus retulit trigenta argenteos principibus sacerdotum Et senioribus <sup>4</sup> dicens peccaui quod tradi derem sanguinem iusti At illi dixerunt quid ad nos tū [f. 19 v. uideris <sup>5</sup> Et plectis arcadgabuthē item plo secessit et abit et laqueo se suspendit <sup>6</sup> tunc princeps sacerdotum acceptis argenteis dixit non licet mittere eos in corbān hoc est in locum quia praetium sanguinis est <sup>7</sup> Consilio hautem accepto emerunt ex illis agrum figuli in sepulturam perigrinorum <sup>8</sup> propter quod uocatus est ager ille acheldemāth quod est ager sanguinis usque in odiernum diem <sup>9</sup> Tunc impletum est quod dictum erat per heremiam pro featum dicentem et accipert xxx argenteos praetium quod adpraetiatuerunt filius israel <sup>10</sup> et dederunt eos in agrum figuli sicut constituit mihi dominus <sup>11</sup> ihs hautem stetit ante praessidem Et interrogauit eum praesses tu es rex iudeorum dicit ei ihs tu dicis <sup>12</sup> Et cum accecit a principibus sacerdotum et senioribus nihil respondebat <sup>13</sup> Tunc dicit illi pylatus non audis quanta aduersus tē dicunt testimonia <sup>14</sup> Et non respondit ei ullum uerbum ita miraretur praes ueraciter <sup>15</sup> per diem sollem nem CONSuerat praessis dimittere populum unum uinctum quem uoluissent <sup>16</sup> habebant hautem uinctum

insignem qui dicitur barabbā<sup>17</sup> congregatisunt hautem illis dixit pylatus quem uultis dimittā uobis barabbā aut ih̄m qui dicitur x̄ps<sup>18</sup> sciebat hautem quod per in uidiam tradi|deranteum [f. 20 r. <sup>19</sup>sedente hautem illo pro tribunali missit ad eum uxor eius dicens nihil sit tibi et iusto illi dicens multa enim pasus sum hodie per uisum propter eum<sup>20</sup> Principes hautem sacerdotes et seniores populi persuaserunt populo ut peteret barabbā ih̄s hautem perdidierunt<sup>21</sup> respondens hautem præsides ait illis quem uultis deduobus dimittā uobis At illi dixerunt autem barabbā<sup>22</sup> Dixit illis pylatus quid ergo faciemus ih̄m qui dicitur x̄ps<sup>23</sup> dicunt omnes crucifigatur Ait illis præsides quid enim mali fecit at illi magis clamabant crucifigatur<sup>24</sup> Uidens hautem pylatus quia quod fecit nihil sed magis tumultus fieri accepta aqua lauit manus suas coram populo dicens INnocens ego sum assanguine huius iusti uos uideritis<sup>25</sup> et respondens uniuersa turba dixit sanguis eius super nōs et super filios uestros<sup>26</sup> Tunc dimisit illis barabbā ih̄s hautem flagillis cesum tradidit eis ut crucifigerent illum<sup>27</sup> Tunc militis præsides duxerunt eum in praetorium et congregauerunt ad eum uniuersum chortem<sup>28</sup> et cum spoliassent eum uestiarunt tunicam purpuream et clamidem cocciniam eum dederunt ei<sup>29</sup> et coronam despinis texerunt Et possuerunt super capud eius inarundinem dexteram et ad genu flexu ante eum deludentes eum dicentes aue rex iudeorum<sup>30</sup> Et expuerunt infaciameius accipiant infaciameius acciperunt arundinem et percutiabant capud eius<sup>31</sup> et post quam inluserunt eum et spoliauerunt eum calamidem ut crucifigeretur induerunt eum [f. 20 v. uestimente sua<sup>32</sup> EXeunt hautem inuenerunt hominem cirinium uenientem obiam sibi nomine simonem hunc [an]gari auerunt ut tollerent crucem<sup>33</sup> et uenit in locum qui dicitur golgoda quod est caluarie locus<sup>34</sup> Et dederunt ei bibere uinum Et cum felle mixtum et eum gustaret noluit bibere<sup>35</sup> Postquam crucifixerunt diuisiarunt uestimenta sua miserunt sortes ut inpleretur quod dictum est per profetam Diuisiarunt sibi uestimenta mea et super uestem meam miserunt sortem<sup>36</sup> et sedentes sermonebant<sup>37</sup> et imposuerunt super capud eius causam scriptum est hic est ih̄s x̄ps rex iudeorum<sup>38</sup> tunc crucifixerunt eum duo latrones unum ad dexteram et unum ad sinistram<sup>39</sup> Transseuntēs hautem blasphemabant eum mouentes capita sua<sup>40</sup> et dixerunt ei uā qui destruas templum dei et in triduo redificabas illud libera te ipsum si filius dei es Et discende de cruce<sup>41</sup> similiter et principes sacerdotum deludes eum Et scribis et fariseis dicebant<sup>42</sup> alios saluos fecit se ipsum non potest saluum facere si rex israhel est descendat nunc de cruce et credimus in eum<sup>43</sup> confidet indeum libenter nunc si uult eum Dixit enim quia filius dei sum<sup>44</sup> id ipsum hautem et latrones qui crucifixerunt eum eo inproperabant ei<sup>45</sup> et post quam crucifixus est A sexta hautem hora tenebrae factae sunt super uniuersam terram in horam nonam<sup>46</sup> circa uero horam nonam clamauit ih̄s uoce magna heli haeli labath sabathani hoc est deus meus deus meus | quid me dereliquisti<sup>47</sup> quidam hautem illic stantes et [f. 21 r.



audientes diciabant *heliam* uocat iste <sup>48</sup> Et *continuo* surgens unus  
 ex eis *acceptam* spongiam impleuit aceto Et inpossuit arundini et  
 dabat ei bibere <sup>49</sup> ceteri uero *dixerunt* sine uidiamus sineniat helias  
 et liberauit eum Alius *hautem* accepta lancia pupungit *latus eius* et  
 exiit aqua et sanguis <sup>50</sup> *ih̄s hautem* iterum exclamans uoce magna  
 emisit *spiritum* <sup>51</sup> et ecce uelum templi *scisum est* in duas partes  
 assummo usque deorsum Et terra mota est et petrae *scisesunt* <sup>52</sup> et  
 monumenta *apertae sunt* Et multa corpora *sanctorum* dormientium  
 surrexerunt <sup>53</sup> et exiuntes demonumentis post resurrectionem ipsius  
 et uenerunt in *sanctam ciuitatem* et multis apparuit <sup>54</sup> Centurio  
*hautem* et qui cum eo erant custodientes *ih̄m* cum uidissent terre  
 motum et ea que fiabant *timuarunt* ualde dicentes uere filius di erat  
 iste <sup>55</sup> Erant *hautem* ibi mulieres multae alonge uidentes *quae* secutae  
 fuerant *ih̄m* agalilia ministrantes illi <sup>56</sup> inter quas erat maria magda-  
 leana Et maria iacobi et ioseph mater et mater filiorum *sebedei* <sup>57</sup> Cum  
*hautem* sero factum esset uenit quidam homo dines abarimathia  
 nomine ioseph qui et ipse *discipulus* erat *ih̄u* <sup>58</sup> hic accessit ad  
 pylatum et petit corpus *ih̄u* tunc pylatus iussit dari cor

\* \* \* \* \*

xxvii. 54. For "timuarunt" possibly "timiarunt" should be read.  
 xxvii. 58. The verso of the leaf which ends here is blank.

## APPENDIX B.

## THE SCRIBES OF THE BOOK OF MULLING.

IN the foregoing pages I have endeavoured to avoid speaking dogmatically as to the number of scribes who were at work upon our book. The question whether the entire manuscript was penned by a single hand is one which must be left for its final decision to expert palæographers. I think it well, however, to state here the convictions on this subject which have been produced by a fresh examination of the book, made when this work was already in type.

I believe that I can distinguish the work of four different scribes in its pages. The Synoptic Gospels appear to have been written throughout, with the exception of a few pages to be mentioned presently, by a scribe whom we may designate by the letter A. He was assisted or followed by three others:

B, who wrote the first fasciculus, containing Jerome's Prefaces, etc. This scribe seems to have written with the side of his pen, the horizontal strokes being heavier than the vertical. This peculiarity distinguishes him at the first glance from A. He further differs from the latter in the form of certain letters. The letter *a*, for example, is usually open at the top; the horizontal stroke of *g* is written to the right of the vertical stroke, and sometimes resolves itself into a mere curved continuation of the latter; *z* also varies from the norm. Some of the abbreviations are peculiar, such as *p*<sup>t</sup>, instead of *p*<sup>o</sup>, for *post*, *ig*<sup>i</sup> instead of *g*, for *igitur* — instead of ÷, for *est*, *at* instead of *li*, for *autem*.

C, the writer of the Office for the Visitation of the Sick: see above p. 9. Like B, this writes *p*<sup>t</sup> for *post*.

D, the scribe of St John's Gospel. His most prominent characteristic is his frequent use of the double point (..) as a punctuation mark, and his habit of dividing the text into short paragraphs. His large initials are not usually projected into the margin. He seldom uses the symbol known as "ceann fa eite" (*ff*), so frequently found in the Synoptic Gospels. His *a* and *g* resemble those of B, but he uses also an open *g* and is fond of V and *r* for U and *u*, and (now and then) of *n* for *u*. He writes *g*<sup>o</sup>, instead of *g*, for *ergo*.

It has next to be remarked that, supposing the distinction between these scribes to have been made out, it can, if I mistake not, be proved that A B D were contemporary. A has, in fact, sometimes handed his pen to one of the others. Thus f. 62 (Luke, vii. 4—viii. 2) has been shown to differ in its script from the pages which precede and follow it. But the peculiarities which distinguish it are in almost all cases found in the first fasciculus: it has the same forms for *a g z*, while the symbol for *est* differs only by the addition of a mark like a comma below the horizontal line.<sup>1</sup> We may conclude,

<sup>1</sup> This difference is quite consistent with identity of hand. We find a similar

with some probability, that for this leaf B relieved A. When we turn to the first column of the verso of f. 72 (Luke xiv. 28-xv. 7) we find a not less striking difference from the preceding and following writing, and here we recognise at once the hand of D. There is the same fondness for short paragraphs and the double point which we have noticed in St John, the same forms of *a*, *q* and *u* are found, and the same abbreviation is used for *ergo*.

It is clear that if the conclusion to which we seem now to have been led is correct, some statements made in an earlier part of this volume must be modified. We can no longer (see pp. 8 *sq.*, 72 *sq.*) speak of the entire manuscript as coming from the pen of a single scribe. It was the work of a group of scribes who wrote side by side in the same scriptorium. The corrector, again, is not to be identified with the scribe of the book, but with one of the three A B D, or perhaps with another of the same set of workers. It is worth noting here that the marginal numerator agrees with the writer of the Eusebian Canons, against the text, in representing the number five by *v* rather than by *u*. May we infer that both numbers and corrections were added by B? See above p. 70.

But, again, if we have succeeded in showing that our Book was penned by a group of contemporary scribes, working together, we find at once a strong corroboration of the hypothesis that the colophon is not original (above p. 17). For it is clearly written by D, the scribe, as we have seen, of but one of the five fasciculi. And yet it undoubtedly asserts that the entire manuscript was written by one scribe, and it no less certainly implies that that scribe was the author of the colophon itself. This, if we have argued aright, is untrue in the case of the book now in our hands, though there is no reason why it should not have been true of its archetype.

But on the other hand it is right to state that the unanimity of palæographers as to the date of our manuscript has been somewhat over-stated at p. 15. So competent an authority as Mr W. M. Lindsay wrote on Oct. 24 1896: "What precise amount of authority the tradition has which connects it [the Book of Mulling] with the end of the seventh century I do not know. But so far as I can see, there is no palæographical counter-evidence. . . . The nearest approach to the Book of Mulling is the Naples Charisius." And again, on Feb. 11, 1897: "I saw the Naples Charisius at Rome. . . I saw enough to convince me that the writing is Irish pointed minuscule of a style very closely resembling that of the Book of Mulling." And he then proceeds to mention certain authorities who assign the Naples manuscript to the end of the seventh or beginning of the eighth century.

variation in the symbol for *est* in the Rosslyn Missal, an Irish MS. in the Advocates' Library, Edinburgh, in passages undoubtedly written by the same scribe. The word *dirit* does not occur in the first fasciculus, nor do *post*, *igitur*, in f. 62. It is therefore impossible to argue from the peculiar abbreviations used for these words.

# INDEX.

- Abbott, Professor T. K., 2, 7, 15, 18,  
21, 31, 32, 40, 44, 66, 74, 186.  
Abercromby, The Hon. J., 171.  
Aberdeen, Martyrology of, 11.  
Abgarus, Epistle to, 165.  
Adamnan, Second Vision of, 153, 155 ;  
*Vita Columbe*, 16, 160, 181 sq.  
Aedh, King, 157.  
*Aeternae rerum*, 158.  
African Readings, 134, 137, 138 sq.,  
141 sq. ; Text, 129.  
Ailbe of Emly, Rule of St, 159.  
Allen, J. R., 20, 29.  
Alphabetic Hymns, 149, 163 sq.  
*Altus Prosator*, 160, 165.  
Ambrose, St, 19.  
*Ancients, Colloquy of the*, 166, 172.  
Anderson, Dr J., 181.  
Angels, 150, sq., 171, 177 sqq.  
Annals of Clonmacnoise, Four Masters,  
Lough Cé, Ulster. See *Clonmacnoise*  
*etc., Annals of*.  
Antiphons, 148, 151, 152, 154 sq., 162.  
Apocalypse, Syriac Version of the, 67.  
Apostles, Hymn of the, 153.  
Aran, Great Island of, 180.  
Ardclinis, 183.  
Ardoilein, Island of, 176, 180.  
Armagh, Book of, 1, 10, 11, 13, 14, 32  
sq., 72, 148, 174, 176, 183 ; Church  
at, 171, 181, 184.  
Art, Son of Conn, Prophecy of, 178.  
*Ascendat Oratio*, 148, 162.  
Atherne the Urgent, 173.  
A'th Maigne, 174.  
Atkinson, Professor R., 147.  
Audite, Hymns beginning with, 163.  
*Audite omnes*, 162.  
*Audite virginis*, 163.  
Augustine St, 19 sq.  
  
Ballymote, Book of, 172.  
Banchory Ternan, 11.  
Bangor, Antiphony of, 147, 148, 151,  
153, 154, 163, 164.  
Basle MS., A. vii. 3, 164.  
Barnabas, St, Copy of St Matthew  
written by, 12.  
Barrow, River, 177.  
  
Beatitudes, 153.  
Bede, *Vita Cuthberti*, 181.  
*Benedictus*, 153, 155.  
*Benedictus in secula*, 155 sq., 162.  
Beneventum, Gospels of, 22, 26.  
Berger, Samuel, 1, 4, 7, 12, 15, 25,  
26, 28, 30, 39, 65, 66, 133, 164, 170,  
186.  
Bernard, Professor J. H., 4, 11, 12, 13,  
66, 131, 136, 147, 148, 153, 154.  
*Blait*, meaning of, 153.  
Biblical Text, General character of, in  
the Book of Mulling, 43 sqq.  
Biblical Text of the Book of Mulling,  
character of in latter chapters of  
St Matthew and earlier of St Luke,  
50 sqq.  
Binding, Art of, unknown among the  
ancient Irish, 28.  
Boann, 172.  
Boniface, St, Gospels of, 25.  
Book of Armagh, Ballymote, Cerne,  
Clonmacnoise, Deer, Dinna, Durrow,  
Finntann, Glendalough, Kells,  
Kilkenny, Lecan, Leinster, Lismore,  
Melaga, Mulling, Rights, Ua Cong-  
bala. See *Armagh &c., Book of*.  
Borromean Tribute, 160.  
Boyne, River, 172.  
Bradshaw, Henry, 3.  
Brenainn, 178.  
Breves Cause, 30.  
Brigid St, 11, 161, 163.  
Brower, 25.  
Brown, J. W., 178.  
Brussels MS., 5100-4, 159, 170 ; Life  
of St Molling, 177.  
  
Caecilte, 172.  
Caiseal-an-urlair, 179.  
*Canticis spiritualibus*, 154, sq.  
Capitula, 30.  
Cashel, see *Rath*.  
Cashel, Psalter of, 14.  
Cathach of the O'Donnells, 13, 171.  
Cathair, meaning of, 173 ; See also  
*Rath*.  
*Celebra Juda*, 162.  
Cerne, Book of, 158.

'Chapters,' Meaning of, 153.  
 Charisius, the Naples, 203.  
 Charter Horn of the Kavanaghs, 2.  
 Chartres copy of St John, 12, 65.  
 Chemical re-agents, 145.  
*Christus illam*, 149.  
*Christus in nostra insola*, 163, *sqq.*  
*Christus redemptor*, 165.  
 Ciampini, J., 22.  
 Circular device, 167, *sqq.*  
 Circular Monasteries, 181 *sqq.*  
 Cividale, Baptistery at, 22.  
 Civitas, see *Cathair, Rath*.  
 Clonmacnoise, 175, 180 ; Annals of, 13 ;  
 Book of, 14.  
 Cochrane, R., 183.  
 Codex Amiatinus, 37, 43, *sqq.*, 73, 76,  
 125 *sqq.* ; Aureus, 32 ; Bezae, 39, 129 ;  
 Bobiensis, 129, 134 ; Brixianus, 129 ;  
 Claromontanus, 59, *sq.*, 134 ; Epternacensis, 32, *sqq.* ; Palatinus, 67, 129,  
 134 ; Sangallensis, 67, 133 ; Sangermanensis, 25, *sq.*, 35, *sq.* ; Usserianus, 18, 30, *sqq.*, 44, *sqq.*, 66, 74,  
*sq.*, 169 ; Usserianus Alter, 44, 57,  
 66, *sq.*, 74, *sq.*, 129, 186, *sqq.* ; Vaticanus (B), 41 ; Vaticanus (*olim*  
 Claromontanus), 59, *sqq.*, 134 ; Veracellensis, 67, 68, 129 ; Veronensis, 129.  
 Coin with symbols of Evangelists, 20,  
*sq.*  
 Colga Ua Duinechda, Prayer of, 170.  
 Colgan, J., *Acta Sanctorum*, 176.  
 Colophon of Book of Durrow, 15, *sq.* ;  
 of Book of Mulling, 3, 6, 145, 169, 203.  
 Columba, St, 160, 166, 174 ; Cathach  
 of, 13, 171 ; Edinburgh, Life of,  
 157 ; Hymns of, 155, 162, 165.  
 Corrections, 42 *sq.*, 70 *sq.*, 73, 126  
*sqq.*, 203.  
 Crawford, Earl of, 67.  
 Credo, 147 *sq.*, 153, 162.  
 Croagh Patrick (Cruach), 150 *sq.*, 157.  
 Cross at St Mullins, 184 ; used to mark  
 site of Church, 174 *sq.*  
 Crosses, 173 *sqq.* ; Exterior, 171, 175 *sq.*  
 Cúil Dremne, Battle of, 166.  
 Cuchulainn, Death of, 172.  
 Cumdach, See *Shrine*.  
 Cummain Fota, 153 ; Hymn of, 151,  
 153, 154, 162, 165.  
 Cumman the Fair, 182.  
 Cunningham, J. H., 5, 183.  
 Cuthbert, St, 181.  
 Cyprianic Text, 129, 131.  
 Dairchell, 14.  
 Daire, Burning of, 157.  
 Danes at Tech Moling, 1.  
*De Arceis*, Old Irish Tract, 147 *sq.*,  
 153, 155, 165.  
 Dedication of Monastic Buildings to  
 Saints etc., 173.

De Dieu L., 67.  
 Deer, Book of, 3, 11, 148, 149.  
 'Dei populum,' Gloss on, 149.  
 Derry, See *Daire*.  
 Desiul, 172, 178.  
*Dictionary of Christian Antiquities*,  
 18, 20.  
 Dinna, Book of, 147.  
*Dianshenchas*, The Bodleian, 172.  
*Dianshenchas*, The Edinburgh, 172.  
*Don-fuir trocaire*, 155.  
 Doorways in Monastic rath, 175 *sq.*  
 Dowden, Bishop J., 16.  
 Doxology of *Immunum Dicat*, 154.  
*d-readings*, 134, 137, 138, 140, 143 *sq.*  
 Druid's Fence, 166.  
 Du Cange, 182.  
 Dundesert, 176, 181.  
 Dunraven, Earl of, 180.  
 Durandus, 19.  
 Durrow, Book of, 13, 15 *sq.*, 21, 27,  
 30 *sqq.*, 40, 43 *sqq.*, 66 ; Monastery  
 at, 181 *sq.*  
 Elmer, Dr A., 170.  
 Enan, 177.  
 Evangelical Symbols, 18 *sqq.*  
 Evangelists, The Four, 170 *sq.*, 175 ;  
 Drawings of the, 2, 3, 12 *sq.*  
*Eraudi nos*, 152, 162.  
 Exemplars, several used in preparing a  
 single copy, 21 *sq.*, 39 *sqq.*, 66 *sq.*, 73.  
 Fechin, St, of Fore, 176.  
 Ferguson, Sir Samuel, 172, 178.  
 Ferta, 181, 183, 184.  
 French, Rev. J. F. M., 2, 183, 185.  
 Fianachta, King, 160.  
 Findelua, 172.  
 Find Mae Cumall, 166, 177.  
 Finnian, St, of Movilla, 16.  
 Fintan, St, 173 ; Book of, 14.  
 Forbes, Bishop A. P., 3, 9, 164.  
 Forrest, John, 22.  
 Forth, Barony of, 173.  
 Forts, Difference between Pagan and  
 Ecclesiastical, 181.  
 Four Masters, Annals of, 1, 13, 153,  
 166, 175, 179.  
 Fowler, Dr J. T., 182.  
 'Galli cantus,' Meaning of, 158.  
 Garland of Howth, see *Codex Usserianus*  
*Alter*.  
 Garrucci, R., 21, 22.  
 Gilbert, J. T., *Nat. MSS. of Ireland*, 3,  
 23, 72, 154.  
 Glendalough, 180 ; Book of, 14.  
 Gospels, Order of in Irish manuscripts,  
 17, *sqq.*, 169 ; Single, in separate  
 fasciculi, 11, *sq.* ; "Western" order  
 of, 21, 26.  
 Grace after dinner, 158, *sq.*

- Greek, Irish Old-Latin recension founded on a study of the, 133, 138, 140.
- Gregory, G. R., 169.
- Gregory I. Pope, 160.
- Gwynn, Professor J., 4, 67.
- Haddan and Stubbs' *Councils*, 3, 66.
- Harden, Rev. J. M., 4.
- Harris, Professor J. R., 39.
- 'Hautem,' Spelling of, 76.
- Hibernensis, 175.
- High Island, 180.
- Hilary, St, Hymn of, 153, *sq.*, 158, *sqq.*, 162, 165; St Gall, MS. of the, 154.
- Howth, Garland of, see *Codex Usserianus Alter*; Siege of, 172.
- Huemer, J., 19.
- Hymns, Book of, see *Liber Hymnorum*; Sung at daily offices, 160.
- Iarlaithe, 178.
- Ignis Creator*, 154.
- Ihs, Expansion of, 76.
- Individualisms of  $r_1$   $r_2$   $\mu$ , 135, *sqq.*, 141, *sqq.*
- Initials, Ornamental, 8, 9
- In memoria eterna*, 151, 162.
- Innismurphy, 180.
- In te Christe*, 165.
- Inuitata quod*, 151, 162.
- Invocation of Saints, 16.
- Iona, 175, 182.
- Irenaeus, St, 18, 20
- Irish Ecclesiastical Record*, 159.
- Irish Manuscripts, difficulty of dating, 15.
- Irish Old-Latin Text based on a study of the Greek ( $\text{?}$ ) 133, 138, 140; African, Italian, and *d*-elements in, 134, *sqq.*; Source of, 134; in St Matthew and St Luke, compared, 144.
- Irish recension of Latin Scriptures, 3.
- Italian text, 129; readings, 134, 137, 138, *sqq.*, 142, *sq.*
- Jameson, Mrs, 21, 170.
- Jerome, St, 18, *sq.*
- 'Job of the Patience,' 170.
- John the Baptist, Festival of St, 157.
- John the Evangelist, Prayer of St, 171; Gospel according to St, frequently copied apart from the rest, 12.
- Juvenius (Pseudo-), 19, 23, 24, 25, 26.
- Kavanagh Family, 2, 7, 14.
- Keating, Dr G., 14.
- Keller, F., 12, 164.
- Kells, Co. Meath, 175; Book of, 30 *sqq.*, 44 *sqq.*, 186.
- Kieran, St, 175.
- Kilkenny, Book of (so-called), 161.
- Killyhurragh, 183.
- Kinahan, G. H., 176.
- Last Leaf, Contents of, 145 *sqq.*
- Lebar Brece, 131, 136, 149, 150, 151, 153, 157, 160, 172.
- Lecan, Yellow Book of, 170, 172.
- Left-hand Circuit, 171 *sq.*; of St Molling, Meaning of, 178.
- Leinster, Book of, 14, 153, 161, 172, 177.
- Liath Meisicith, 1.
- Liber Hymnorum, The Irish, 147, 171, chap. vii. *passim*; Franciscan Copy of the, 147, 148, 150, 151, 152, 154, 157, 162, 163; Testimony to Early Use of, 162.
- Liber Septimaniorum, 160.
- Lindsay, W. M., 203.
- Lismore, Book of, 11, 153, 166, 172, 174, 178.
- Liturgical Fragment, Purpose of office contained in the, 157 *sqq.*; Scheme of office contained in the, 162.
- Lonan, St, 178.
- Lorica, 150, 153, 157, 158, 161.
- Lough Cé, Annals of, 175.
- Macalister, R. A. S., 179.
- MacCarthy, Dr H. B., 153, 170.
- MacCulloch, Rev. J. A., 5.
- MacDurnan, Gospels of, 24 *sq.*
- MacErc, 175.
- MacNeill, Muirheartach, Circuit of Ireland by, 172.
- MacRegol, Gospels of, 23.
- MacRiagla, Snedgus and, Voyage of, 172.
- Magnificat*, 147, 153, 162.
- Mahee Island, 181.
- Maicstatempus immensam*, 153 *sq.*, 162.
- Marold, C., 19.
- Mark, St, the Gospel of the Resurrection, 19.
- Matthew, Gospel according to St, copied apart from the rest, 12.
- Media Noctis*, 154.
- Meyer, Professor K., 147, 153.
- Michael's Hymn, 153.
- Miserere mei Domine*, 153.
- 'Mixture' of text, how produced, 73.
- Molaise, St, of Devenish, Shrine of Gospels of, 21.
- Molaise, St, of Innismurphy, 180.
- Molling Luachra, St, 13 *sq.*; Flight of, 160 *sq.*; Hymn of, 161; Lives of, 160, 177; Rath of, 173; Spelling of the Name, 154; Yellow Book of, 14.
- Molling, Meaning of, 14.
- Molling Luath, 14.
- Monasteries, Form of, 179 *sqq.*
- 'Monasterium Rotundum,' Meaning of, 181 *sqq.*

- Mone, F. J., *Latéinische Hymnen*, 163.  
 Möttingen Gospels, 27.  
 Mugroin, Abbot of, Hy, 166.  
 Muirchu Macen-Mactheni, 11.  
 Mulling, the Book of, Antiphons to Hymn of Secundinus in, 151; Blank leaf and Gospel fragments bound up with, 7, 12; Character of Biblical text of, 3, 42 *sqq.*; Colophon of, 3, 6, 145, 169, 203; Coloured initials in, 9; Contents of, 1, 7 *sqq.*; Corrections in, 42, 70 *sq.*, 73, 126 *sqq.*, 203; Date of, 1, 13 *sqq.*, 203; Deposited in Trinity College, Dublin, 2; Derived from Autograph of St Molling, 17; Drawings of Evangelists bound up with, 2, 3, 12 *sq.*; Exemplars of, at least two in number, 41; History of, 1 *sqq.*, 17, 72 *sq.*, 153; John's (St), Gospel in, derived from a MS. written *per colu et commatu*, 37; Inversion of clauses in, 39; Omissions in, 38 *sq.*; Last Leaf of, 145 *sqq.*; Mark's (St), Gospel from a Vulgate copy different from that from which preliminary matter is taken, 41; Miscalculations of Scribe of, 11, 17; Notices of, 2 *sqq.*; Old-Latin portions of, see *Old-Latin portions of B. of M.*; Order of Gospels in, 17, 169, 171; Recent controversy concerning, 4; Scribes of, 202 *sq.*; Sections of, 30 *sqq.*, 69; Shrine of, 1 *sq.*, 12, 13; Stitched but not bound, 10; Tricolumnar writing in, 10; Variation of hand-writing in, 8 *sq.*, 202 *sq.*; Visitation Office in, 3, 9, 147, 149, 158; Volumina of, 6 *sqq.*, 17.  
 Munnu, St, 173.  
 Munter, F. C. C. K., 20.  
*Noli Pater*, 155 *sqq.*, 158, 162, 166;  
 Time when recited, 157.  
 Nuremberg, Irish Gospels at, 27.  
 O'Curry, Professor E., 2, 8, 175.  
 O'Donnell's *Life of St Columba*, 171.  
 O'Donnells, Cathach of the, 171.  
 O'Donovan, Dr J., 166, 180.  
 O'Grady, S. H., 161.  
 Oileu-Tsenach, Cashel on, 173, 181.  
 Olden, Rev. T., 4, 146, 170, 173, 175, 176, 177.  
 Old-Latin portions of the Book of Mulling, Existence of the, proved, 50 *sqq.*; Extent of the, determined, 55 *sqq.*; Hypotheses to account for the, 65 *sqq.*; Text of the, 76 *sqq.*; Value of the, as witnesses to Irish pre-hieronymian text; 74 *sq.*  
 Old-Latin portions of other MSS., 65.  
 Old-Latin Text, The Irish, Affinities of, 129 *sqq.*; Source of, 134.  
 O'Maicin, Maelbrighde, 175.  
 Oratory at St Mullins, 185.  
 Order of the Gospels, "Western" 18, 21; in the Book of Mulling, 17, 169, 171.  
 Ordnance Survey, 177, 179, 180.  
 Paciaudi, P. M., 20.  
 Parallel lists of Saints, 170.  
*Pater Noster*, 147 *sq.*, 153, 162.  
*Patricius Episcopus*, 148, 151, 162.  
 Patrick, St, 11, 171, 174; *Confession* of, 129 *sq.*; Gospels of, 11; Hymn of, see *Secundinus, St, Hymn of*; Lebar Brece Homily on, 172; Quotation of Matt. xxiv. 14 by, 129 *sq.*; *Tripartite Life of*, 11, 150, 157, 172, 174, 175, 181.  
*Per merita*, 152, 162.  
 Petrie, Dr G., 176, 179 *sq.*, 181, 182.  
 Pfäfers, Book of the Confraternities of, 28.  
 Pliny's *Natural History*, 178.  
 'Popuitrine,' 149.  
 Prefaces to Hymns, 150, 157, 160, 162 *sqq.*, 165.  
 Prophets, the greater, 170 *sq.*  
 Psalms, single verses of, recited in the offices, 165.  
 Rath at Dundesert, 176; at Killyhurragh, 183; at Shankill, 183; Circular, 179 *sq.*, 181, 184; of St Molling, 173, 184; of St Patrick at Armagh, 184; on Ardoilean, 176; represented by Circular Device, 173 *sqq.*  
 Reading of St Luk. iv. 5, ix. 55, 56, 68 *sq.*, 128; of St Matt. v. 1, 147; of St Matt. xxvi. 60, xxvii. 49, 133.  
 Readings, see *Variants*.  
 Reeves, Bishop W., 3, 16, 160, 161, 166, 171, 176, 179, 181, 182, 183.  
 'Religiosus,' Meaning of, 178.  
 Resurrection, St Mark, the Gospel of the, 19.  
 Ridge at Ross Broce, 177, 183.  
 Right-hand Circuit, 171 *sq.*; Turn, 172.  
 Rights, Book of, 172.  
 Rosas Bible, 65.  
 Ross Broce, 177, 183.  
 Rosslyn Missal, 203.  
 Round Tower, 182.  
 Ruins at St Mullins, 183 *sqq.*  
 Rushworth Gospels, 23.  
 Saints 'of one Manner of Life,' 170.  
 St Gall, MSS. at, 11 *sq.*, 67, 133, 154.  
 St Mullins, 2, 14; Parish Church at, 184; Remains at, 183 *sqq.*

- Sanday, Professor W., 67, 133 *sq.*  
 Secl Baidi Binnb'raig, 172.  
 Schannat, J. F., 25.  
 Scribes of the Book of Mulling, 202 *sq.*  
 Sechnall or Secundinus, see *Secundinus*.  
 Sections, Ancient, of Gospels, inference to be drawn from their presence in a manuscript, 41; Eusebian, 37, 42, 71, 76; of Book of Mulling, 30 *sqq.*, 69.  
 Secundinus, St, 174; Hymn of, 148 *sqq.*, 152, 153, 157, 159, 162, 164, *sq.*; Time of reciting the, 151.  
 Sedulius, Verses of, 22, 24, 26.  
 Senan, St, 172.  
 Shankill in the Ards, 183.  
 Shrine of Book of Armagh, 13; Book of Durrow, 13; Book of Mulling, 1 *sq.*, 12, 13; Cathach Psalter, 13; St Molaise's Gospels, 21; Stowe Missal, 13.  
 Shrines containing single Gospels, 11.  
 Simpson, W., 172.  
 Skellig Michael, 181.  
 Skye, Cashel in, 181.  
 Sliabh Mairge, 177.  
 Snedgus and MacRiagla, Voyage of, 172.  
 Stake, setting a, 175.  
 Stanzas, Three, in place of an entire hymn, 149 *sq.*, 151 *sq.*, 153, 156, 162 *sqq.*, 165 *sqq.*  
 'Stichometrical' writing in archetype of St John, 37 *sqq.*  
 Stokes, Dr W., 11, 152, 153, 154, 159, 161, 166, 168, 170, 172, 177, 182.  
 Stokes, Miss M., 2, 13, 16, 181.  
 Stonyhurst Copy of St John, 11.  
 Stowe Missal, 13, 148; St John, 12, 13, 66.  
 Stuart, Dr J., 3, 11, 179.  
 'Summaries' of the Gospels, 30, 39 *sq.*  
 Swords, 174.  
 Symbols of Evangelists, 18 *sqq.*  
 Tech Moling, 1, 2, 14.  
 Tech mor, 182.  
*Te deum Ymnus*, 154 *sq.*  
 Ternan, St, Gospels written by, 11.  
 Thomasius, Cardinal J. M., 158.  
 Three Stanzas, 149 *sq.*, 151 *sq.*, 153, 156, 162 *sqq.*  
 Tirechan's *Collections*, 174, 183.  
 Tiree, Island of, 182.  
 Tobur Patraic, 175.  
 Todd, Dr J. H., 147, 149, 152, 159, 164, 165, 170, 171, 181.  
 Topography of St Mullins, 183 *sqq.*  
 Trevit, 178.  
 Tripartite Life of St Patrick, 11, 150, 151, 157, 174, 181.  
 Twining, Miss L., 20, 21.  
 Ua Conghala. Book of, 14.  
 Ulster, Annals of, 13.  
 Ultan, Hymn of St, 153, 163 *sqq.*  
*Unitas in Trinitate*, 154 *sq.*, 162.  
 Ussher, Archbishop J., 1.  
 Vallancey, General, 1 *sq.*, 14.  
 Vallum, see *Rath*.  
 Variants, Individual, of  $\mu$   $r_1$   $r_2$ , 135 *sqq.*, 140 *sqq.*; in which two of these MSS. agree, 129 *sqq.*, 138 *sqq.*  
 Variations from Vulgate in Irish Manuscripts, Causes of, 55.  
 Victor, The Angel, 171, 178.  
 Vidrug, 25.  
 Visitation of the Sick, Office for the, 9, 147, 149, 158.  
 Volumina, 6 *sqq.*, 17.  
 Vulgate, Imperfect Copies of the, 66.  
 Ware, Sir James, 180.  
 Warren, Rev. F. E., 3, 9, 14, 154, 155, 157, 158, 161, 163, 164.  
 Wattenbach, W., 27.  
 Week, Hymns for the, 160.  
 Well of St Mulling, 184.  
 Westcott and Hort, 73.  
 Westcott, Bishop B. F., 20, 21.  
 Westwood, J. O., 2, 3, 9, 12, 23, 24, 25, 28, 72, 145, *sq.*, 167.  
 White, Rev. H. J., 15, 25, 67.  
 Wilde, Sir W. R., 175.  
 Wordsworth, Bishop J., 25.  
 Xp̄s, Expansion of, 76.  
*Ymnus dicat*, see *Hilary, St, Hymn of*.





[illegible]

PRINTED IN U S A



BS2555 .B.L41  
Chapters on the Book of Mulling

Princeton Theological Seminary-Speer Library



1 1012 00119 3368